



# Zui Wu Dao

Author : 二帮主

Synopsis :

Xuan Luo has no recollection of his past. The only thing that can identify him is the jade around his neck. But ever since he had opened the mysterious book from the forest, his strength has multiplied and a current has been running through his body. Strangely enough, the current running through his body resembles the faint current from his jade. Who is he? What is the connection between his jade and the book?

---

Info :

<http://www.novelupdates.com/series/zui-wu-dao/>

<https://www.mangaupdates.com/series.html?id=118205>

Manga :

[http://mangafox.me/manga/zui\\_wu\\_dao/](http://mangafox.me/manga/zui_wu_dao/)

Raws :

<http://www.17k.com/list/452819.html>

Translator :

<https://liveandlearn88.com/2015/11/04/zui-wu-dao-table-of-contents/>



## Glossary

Ba gua – <http://www.eightbranches.ca/bagua/>

Bai Tian – Xuan Luo's best friend

Biao tou – The owner of a store that helps keep people's valuables safe for a price. People will come redeem their items after.

Bu fa – Footwork

Che – 1/3 of a meter, the length of a ruler, it is how Chinese people measure "feet"

Chun Yang Palace – the group that focuses nei li, while using style to assist

Chun yang wu ji gong – the strongest nei gong xin fa from Wu Dang

Da ge – big brother or a polite way of addressing a male that is older than you

Dang Jia – somewhat like the boss of the household (usually the eldest is the boss)

Di zi – disciple

Dong Fang Yu – One of the most powerful person in Qian Deng Zhen (a woman)

Du Cheng – One of the major cities

E mei – One of the big Clans

Feng Sao Mei Hua – Literal translation: Wind spread plum blossoms (usually, people chant their spell when they fight)

Feng Shui – [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Feng\\_shui](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Feng_shui)

Gai Bang – One of the big Clans

Ge – older brother or a polite way of addressing an older guy

Gong zi – a polite way of addressing a male

Guan Shan Jue – Xuan Luo's stepfather

Hu Han – one of the bad guys/ the one who beat Guan Shan Jue

Hu xin gong – most basic nei gong xin fa from Wu Dang

Jian fa – sword spell

Jian qi – sword energy

Jiang hu – society/fighting world

Jiang hu zhong ren – a person that is part of the society, usually referring to the fighting world

Jie jie -older sister or a polite way of addressing a lady that is older than you

Jin – weight equal to 0.5 kg

Jing mai – where all the blood/energy flows to in the body

Jun Zi Tang – One of the big Clans

Ke guan – a polite way to address a guest to a restaurant or hotel

Kung fu -Martial Art skills

Lao san – 3rd eldest (san means 3)

Lao tou – an impolite way of addressing an old man (could be father or any old figure)

Liang yi gong – the second level nei gong xin fa from Wu Dang (out of 3)

Luo Cha Men – One of the big Clans

Luo Cun – a village near Qian Deng Zhen

Mei zi – a polite way of calling a younger girl

Mi hun biao – Literal translation: hallucinating darts

Nei gong – Internal strength/ability

Nei li – Internal power

Qi -Energy/state of mind

Qian Deng Zhen – The town Xuan Luo has lived in since he was 8

Quan fa – Fist spell or fists (it's not really boxing. The online dictionary says boxing ...)

Shang Hua – Hu Han's second eldest brother

Shao Lin – One of the big Clans

Shen Tui Men – One of the Clans

Shi di – junior male fellow student (The shi indicates that they are under

the same Clan or follow the same master)

Shi jie – senior female fellow student

Shi mei – junior female fellow student

Shi xiong – senior male fellow student

Shi Zi Yao Tou – Literal translation: Lion shaking its head (spell)

Shuang Han – The name of one of the two who fought in the air

Shu – It means uncle. It doesn't have to be someone who is biologically related to you. It's also a polite way to address an older man you don't know

## Tai He Dian – Hall of Supreme Harmony

## Tai ji ba gua –

[illegible]

Tai Ji Jian Wu -Literal translation: Tai Chi Sword Dance (spell)

## Tang Men – One of the big Clans

Tian Yu Zi – Xuan Luo's master



Wai gong – Outer strength/martial arts (wai means outer in Chinese)

Wu Dang – One of the big Clans

Wu xiu – A person who studies Martial Arts ( Wu = Martial, Xiu = study)

Wu zhe – A true Martial Artist (Wu = Martial, Zhe = person)

Xiao jie – lady

Xiao xiong di – little brother or a polite way of addressing a boy that is younger than you

Xin fa – The spell

Xuan Luo – The main character of the story

Xuan Yuan – Xuan Luo's two-character surname

Ye ye – Grandfather or a polite way of addressing an elderly man

Zhang gui -shopkeeper or inn keeper

Zhang lao – the elder (lao actually means "old" in Chinese)

Zhang Men – the Clan keeper/the one in charge

Zhang Ri – The name of one of the two who fought in the air

Zhen fa – This is very hard to explain. It has something to do with the positioning of the fighters. Everyone has a part and they have to work together in order for it to be effective. Here, watch this youtube video: what zhen fa looks like <– It's something like that. (so you have an idea). But in the novel, they're not in armours.

Zi Yang Palace – the group that focuses on style, while using nei li to assist

NOTE: Although there are so many "Zhang" (above), it's actually a different character in Chinese. It is spelt the same in English, but the intonation is different.

# Chapter 1 The Ragged Book

"Hot...it's so hot, where...where am I? FIRE. Everything is on fire! What happened to everyone else...?"

A small fragile figure stumbled and ran. If one looked closely, they could tell it was a child around seven or eight of age.

The child seems to be unaware of what is happening. He is moving forward, with survival being his only wish.

The child trips as he runs, behind him, the red blaze reflects upon his face. We can vaguely see that his clothes are all torn, with only one sleeve, revealing a thin arm.

Despite being covered in dirty ashes, it does not hide his delicate features. His messy long hair indicates that it has not been cut in awhile. His hair nearly covers his clear eyes from sight. His skin is the colour of yellow wax, and he is at least one size smaller than a child of his age.

The child staggered for some distance. Distracted, he did not notice the uneven curb.

As expected, he fell. His hands reached out as he lost his balance, and his fingers deeply sunk into the mud. The harsh impact caused his palms to bleed. The blood mixes with the soil, revealing a colour of pain.

The child woke up from the fall, and his cloudy eyes showed a sense of consciousness. It was instantly filled with fear. The child turns back, and only sees a towering fire.

At that instant, the child suddenly felt lighter. Looking down, he realized he was in mid air; someone was firmly holding on his waist.

Xuan Luo didn't dare to look down. But the moment he closed his eyes, all he sees was the blazing inferno. He did not want to open his eyes but he did. Since he did not want to look down, he could only let his curious eyes follow the person who was holding him.

Without warning, everything turned black, and he lost all consciousness.

---

"Ah!!" Xuan Luo's forehead is covered in sweat. His whole body is drenched as well. His face is white as paper. This is not the first time he had this nightmare. In the recent months, he has been having this nightmare more frequently. But it was never this clear. This time, he saw the whole thing.

He is thirteen this year. As far as he knew, he has been living at this place for five years now. But how he arrived, he has no idea. He cannot recall anything.

He sat upright, back against the bed frame. Looking ahead, his eyes seem hollow. On his forehead, big drops of sweat appeared and rolled

down his face. His breathing is quick and deep. The dream had quite an impact.

After taking a few deep breaths, he felt slightly better. But he still lacked energy...

Leaning on the bed frame, Xuan Luo closed his eyes. After resting for a bit, he quickly got up and without realizing it, he took out the yellow book he found from the forest and started scrutinizing it. The book did not have a name, and he had difficulty understanding the content. The words together didn't make sense. When he first found the book, he thought it was useless. After he got home, he put the book away and did not think much of it. Once in awhile, though, he would take it out and look at a few pages. Since he couldn't understand it, he left it aside. But at this moment, he realized there was a secret to it. Usually, books are read from right to left, from top to bottom. But for this book, it's read from left to right! The moment he figured this out, he was excited. Although he wasn't used to reading it this way, he could not wait to turn the pages. Time passed, minute by minute. The setting Sun shone through the window and onto his table. "So this is what..." Xuan Luo is talking to himself. It seems like he is starting to comprehend the book and is following the instructions.

Sitting cross-legged on his bed, he repeats the xin fa from the book. Slowly, he felt a warm current spreading throughout his whole body.

At that moment, he crumpled his brows. He seems to be suffering from severe pain.

The warm current happened to cause a burning sensation. Xuan Luo has no idea why, because he was just following the instructions from the

book. He did not even know what the book is for. The pain left him momentarily stunned.

Xuan Luo doesn't know what to do and tries to stop the xin fa from moving. But the moment he tried to prevent it, the xin fa accelerated and not only did the pain not go away, it was getting more intense.

"What the heck is going on?" Xuan Luo is anxious, silently blaming the spell.

"Ah!" He cannot stand this any longer. His face is so red, it's frightening. His body looked like he was roasted.

At that instant, he felt a cool current spreading out, slowly passing through his body, fighting with the warm current.

The two currents refuse to back down, and due to the cold current, he feels hot and cold at the same time.

He has no idea what is happening, and can only bare with it. If anyone saw him, they would think that he is distorted and about to transform.

After awhile, his face finally looked normal again.

The two currents have combined together.

According to the book, this is nei li. But he never thought that this nei li would be so overbearing. He never thought he would have to experience

something like this. He has no intentions of experiencing it a second time.

Since his clothes were soaked, he decided to change. As he took off his clothes, he reveals his strong chest. Around his neck, is jade pendent that somewhat resembles a snake turtle.

Subconsciously, he touched the jade. Immediately, astonishment appeared in his eyes.

The jade is actually producing a faint current. After, he carefully analyzed the feeling -the current felt practically like the current that went through his body!

Xuan Luo quickly dressed and took his jade off. He looked at it in great detail.

Ever since he was young, he had this jade. He has never thought much of it, but what happened today shocked him. It is only now that he is starting to wonder about the history of this jade.

After inspecting it for awhile, Xuan Luo is still clueless. He decides to wear the jade again. The jade is the only item that could help him find his real family. He has nothing else that could identify him.

Unconsciously, the sky has already turned black. Xuan Luo never thought his afternoon nap would turn out this way. Sighing, he shook his head.

Everything around him seemed more clear and fresh though. Even the

insects did not seem as loud and annoying. Instead, it gave him an unique feeling.

But then again, it may be because he was comparing it to the pain that he has been through. He seems to feel extra fresh, and his mind enlightened. Running out to the courtyard, he bent his waist, yawned, and climbed onto the roof.

The evening sky is filled with shining stars, under the bright yellow moon. Xuan Luo reaches out his hand, and feels a sense of calmness surrounding him. He loved that feeling. On the roof, he feels at peace. Because of that, each time he has a nightmare, he would climb to the roof and look up at the sky. It didn't matter whether the sky was white or black. He just likes being part of nature...

(Creak)

The door to the courtyard opened, and a man with greying hair walked out. He looked up and saw Xuan Luo on the roof. Smiling, he said, "Xuan Luo. It's so late! Why are you still on the roof? Come down and sleep!?"

The old man looked a bit angry, but the smile on his face was nice and relaxed.

Without looking at the old man, eyes still upon the stars, Xuan Luo loudly replied, "Yes, Stepfather! I will. You go to sleep first!"

The old man heard him and didn't say anything else. He knows Xuan Luo had this habit. After all, he has already spent five years with him.



Humming a song, the old man swayed back into the room...

Xuan Luo shook his head, grimaced and mumbled, "You know you can't sing, why are you trying?"

He was conflicted. Each time the old man returns home, his ears always have to go through the awful singing...

## Chapter 2 Anger

The early morning sky has already begun to turn pale. Xuan Luo had remained on the roof the entire night. When he got up, he realized his clothes were covered in dew. Smiling, he directly jumped off the roof, landing steadily on the ground.

There was no one in the room. Judging from the time, he knows that Guan Shan Jue must have gone to the restaurant. The year he was eight, he fainted outside his house. Guan Shan Jue, showing kindness, took care of him for a few days until he woke up.

But when he woke up, it was as if he lost all his memory. He could only recall his name, nothing else. Guan Shan Jue was speechless. Since he had no child of his own, he decided to raise him as his child. It has been five years since he became his stepfather.

During these five years, he would go to the Martial Arts Master's building to practice fighting techniques every day. Although it was only basic routine, his physique slowly improved.

Arriving at the Martial Arts' building, he immediately sees Bai Tian. Bai Tian was practicing his technique.

"Bai Tian!" he loudly yelled. Bai Tian is his best friend. When he first arrived at the building, only Bai Tian acknowledged him. Slowly, they became good friends. Their friendship has continued for five years now.

"Why are you so late today?" Looking at him, Bai Tian was puzzled. Usually, he would be the first one to arrive. But today, he was an hour later than his usual time.

"Couldn't help it. I slept in!" Looking at Bai Tian, he asked, "Is the Master here?"

Bai Tian was the only one in the main hall. There was no sign of the Master.

"Master Li has gone out. I think it might be awhile before he comes back." Bai Tian replied.

They were the only ones in the building. It wasn't that no one wanted to learn, but the building was very old and generally, people cannot learn much from here either. Not to mention, there were not a lot of conflict in this small town. Generally, people lived in harmony. As a result, the only purpose to learn martial arts is really to strengthen the body.

The techniques taught by Master Li were extremely simple. Xuan Luo thought he could've just lifted stones locks on his own. But, he did think there might be some benefit to practicing.

"Come. Let's practice and compare!" Looking at him, Bai Tian awkwardly struck his arm.

This is the way they practiced. He has never truly beaten Bai Tian though. There were times where he had "won" but Bai Tian had purposely gone easy on him.

Although he was aware, he never said anything about it.

"Good!" Xuan Luo laughed. The two stepped apart and began to battle.

After a few rounds, the two of them lied down onto the floor with sweat dripping everywhere. Bai Tian surprisingly looked at him and asked, "When did you become so strong?"

"How would I know? Just keep practicing and strength will develop!" he responded. He has no idea that his strength has increased due to the book from yesterday.

"I'm sure you let me win on purpose, Bai Tian!" He was displeased with his victory. He had always lost. Why is he winning all of a sudden? There was only one explanation. Bai Tian must have given him special treatment.

"No, I was planning to beat you up! I definitely didn't go easy on you!" Bai Tian chuckled.

He quickly pounced on Bai Tian. "WHO do you want to beat up?!"

And the two friends rolled across the ground continuously, laughing nonstop.

---

"I have to go now!" said Bai Tian.

"Take care, bye!" he waved at him.

On his way home, he was bewildered. How come he felt so much stronger?

He was deep in thought. All of a sudden, something seemed obvious.

Could it ...could it be the content from the book?

He quickened his pace. If it really was the book from yesterday, then the book is definitely not as simple as it seems.

He sees from far away that the restaurant is surrounded by people. Immediately, his heart tightens. He has a very bad feeling about this.

On the ground was Guan Shan Jue. He lay unconscious; his body was covered in blood.

But although so many were around him, no one seemed to care. Their eyes showed pity, yet no one made a move.

Seeing this, he became furious. They were all from the village. His eyes turned red and he stormed through the crowd.

"Get out of my way!" he shrieked. The witnesses were jolted by his voice, and stood aside for him to pass.

The young man who was beating everyone looked up and saw him approaching. He didn't say a word, but his eyes showed disdain.

He got closer step by step, disregarding everyone else. The only person he saw was Guan Shan Jue. When he got close to Guan Shan Jue, his heart felt like it was being stabbed by knives. Guan Shan Jue looked dead. He howled, "STEP...FATHER...!!"

His eyes were bloody red. Seeing this, the villagers' heart ached.

Master Li sees him and screams, "Run!!"

This man is definitely not good to provoke. The reason why no one is doing anything is because he is too strong. Even Master Li is no match to him, and Master Li is the strongest person from Qian Deng Zhen. If he couldn't defeat him, no one else can.

The evil man sees him, but totally disregards Xuan Luo because he thinks Xuan Luo has a face of a beggar.

Yet, Xuan Luo's scarlet eyes cause him to feel slightly uneasy.

"You want to run? Well, it's TOO LATE." The man loudly screeched. Lifting his fist, the man exposes his veins and muscles. Master Li, along with everyone else, think he is screwed. Some of the crowd even cover their eyes.

The man throws his punch at him.

(Bang)

He was unprepared for the attack. The powerful fist caused him to fly across the ground and smash into a table. The table was totally destroyed.

The man sneered. Xuan Luo fell under one blow. He thought Xuan Luo might have been an opponent. He was stupid to have been a little shaken by his glare.

But Xuan Luo did not appear to be hurt. He quickly got up and walked towards the man. His eyes were gleaming.

The man was dazed. Although the punch was simple, it carried about fifty or sixty percent of his overall strength. If he were to get hit by it, he would not have been able to stand up so easily. He is starting to sense danger.

Seeing Xuan Luo approach, the man instantly strikes again. The key is to strike when your opponent is unaware. Once you get the upper hand, you are already winning half way. This dirty trick is extremely common amongst the people.

Currently, the only techniques Xuan Luo has acquired is what Master Li had taught him. So those simple moves are the only ones he could use. Although they are not very complex, they are very practical. He lifts his fist and aims for the man.

The two fists fight against each other. Big vs. Small. At that moment, everyone's hearts are hanging by a thread.

At that instant, he subconsciously uses his inner nei li. The nei li begins from the core and starts spreading throughout his body. Soon it arrives at his fist, multiplying his strength.

The man begins to worry. Sweat starts appearing on his forehead. At that moment, he realizes Xuan Luo is no easy target.

"Ah!!" Xuan Luo loudly roared. His nei li swiftly soars, directly aiming for the man.

(Bang)

The man's body flew. Originally, there were a lot of villagers standing around. But at that moment, they all stood back and the man landed on the ground. He spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, and his face turned white as paper. Looking at Xuan Luo's youthful figure, he could not believe his eyes.

Now that the man is injured, the villagers no longer feared him. Everyone begins to throw punches at him. They are not afraid to show their anger now.

Xuan Luo's punch was powered by nei li. The man's inner organs must be damaged. If Xuan Luo had mastered his nei li, the man would have died.



Since he used so much of his strength, he felt faint. But at that moment, Guan Shan Jue was still lying on the ground. He takes a look and realizes his Stepfather was alright. He was just covered in blood.

Xuan Luo was no longer angry. He had used all his strength already. At that moment, he felt so weak. If he didn't have to hold onto his Stepfather, he probably would have fainted by now.

"Is Mr. Guan okay?" the villagers asked. Some are concerned for Guan Shan Jue, and are still around. But seeing Xuan Luo, they are scared to come close. After all, their memory is still fresh from earlier.

Xuan Luo looked at them and harshly said, "Why are you all just watching? Why aren't you helping?"

Right away, everyone looked down. He reached his limit and passed out.

The villagers feel guilty. Xuan Luo had saved them and they are thankful. Seeing both Xuan Luo and Guan Shan Jue passed out, they carried them away.

The only person remaining was Master Li. He was supposed to be the only person who could defend Qian Deng Zhen. He feels guilty and ashamed of himself...

## Chapter 3 The Blackout

After Xuan Luo fainted, Master Li carried him and Guan Shan Jue back to the house behind the restaurant.

Since Guan Shan Jue was already very old, his injuries were relatively serious. No one really knew what happened, but the villagers had some assumptions:

1. After his meal, the man purposely wanted to pick a fight. However, since Guan Shan Jue is good natured, he didn't seem to be bothered. But seeing his smiling face, the man deliberately wanted to make things difficult.

2. The flavour of the tea was not strong enough. Since the man had a nasty temper, he blamed it on Guan Shan Jue. As for Guan Shan Jue's apologetic smile, the man saw it as a jeer. Thus, it led to the fight.

At first, someone tried to step in. But the man's fighting skills were too good. The man became more enraged and started to fight the villager as well. He then threatened to kill Guan Shan Jue.

The villagers of Qian Deng Zhen were not used to this. Nothing like this has ever happened before. They were truly scared. They never thought the man would go so far. When Master Li saw what was happening, he stepped out. Master Li was one of the few from Qian Deng Zhen who could actually fight, so he certainly would not stand aside and watch a stranger bully the people. But, unexpectedly, Master Li was no match for

the man.

Hence, although the villagers were angry, they didn't dare to act. All they could do was watch Guan Shan Jue get beaten.

It was around then when Xuan Luo appeared...

When Xuan Luo saw that Master Li wasn't helping his Stepfather, he was annoyed. But after quickly thinking about it, he let it go. After all, Qian Deng Zhen was a small town. Anyone who knew martial arts only had the shallow basics. Plus, Master Li was already old. The fact he could make a few moves is already pretty decent. Xuan Luo realized he was a bit too emotional when he saw Guan Shan Jue. Thinking back, he wasn't used to that feeling.

"Is Stepfather alright?" he lightly asked.

"He should be fine, but he must rest for a few days." Master Li sighed. His tone of voice sounded deep and apologetic.

"Li ye ye, take a rest. I am going to take a look at Stepfather." Xuan Luo goes to Guan Shan Jue's bedside.

The restaurant was small. There was only a small house behind it. Despite its size, the house had everything it needed. It was simple and refreshing. Although it wasn't glamorous, it was very cozy.

Guan Shan Jue was still in deep sleep, but his face had a very peaceful expression. If one didn't see his injuries on his body, they wouldn't be

able to tell he was beat up. It's a good thing that he is alright

Master Li did not want to disturb Xuan Luo, so he stayed where he was. But he didn't leave either, because there was something he wanted to say. The problem was, he didn't know how to bring it up....

Seeing Guan Shan Jue in deep slumber, Xuan Luo also didn't want to disturb him.

"I wonder how you felt about what happened today, Stepfather.." he whispered, shaking his head.

Turning around, Xuan Luo realizes that Master Li was still there. He smiled.

"Li ye ye, thank you!" Xuan Luo was aware that Master Li had carried him back after he fainted. "It's getting late. Please go home and rest!"

As Xuan Luo spoke, the sky was beginning to turn red. The Sun was about to set.

Master Li also agreed it was getting late. He took a quick glance at Guan Shan Jue, and said, "Xuan Luo, I'm going to leave now. Take good care of our Guan old man!"

Master Li gets up to leave the room, and Xuan Luo walks him out.

Watching Li ye ye's figure from the back, Xuan Luo stood outside the

restaurant.

But within a few steps, Master Li suddenly stopped and turned around, "Xuan Luo. If you have time tomorrow, please come see me!"

Xuan Luo was somewhat surprised, but didn't think much of it. He agreed and walked back inside.

—

It was night time and extremely quiet. We can hear the lanterns swaying from the doors and the insects chirping. Although there weren't many insects during the beginning of summer, they can be quite noisy at night.

Today's incident caused Xuan Luo to realize that without ability, one is destined to be bullied. Thus, he has made up his mind.

He took out the ragged book from under his pillow and hesitated for a moment; but ultimately decided to try out the xin fa again. Today's incident shattered his wish for peace.

If his assumptions were correct, then this book should be about nei gong xin fa; specialized in nei li. Xuan Luo opens the book and tries the xin fa once more.

Yesterday, the pain from the xin fa left a strong impression on him. So, he is prepared and expects to suffer from the same pain again.

But this time, the pain did not occur. Today, he is not experiencing the painful feeling from yesterday.

Xuan Luo relaxed his brows, and calmly felt the nei li go through his body like water. The nei li swims through his body, and lastly it all returns to the core. According to the book, this feeling occurs after a day of practicing. If one looks carefully, they can see that the water from the lake has increased drastically...(Sorry, this is very confusing. I think it might be a Chinese saying that he has improved dramatically?)

Xuan Luo slowly opened his eyes. The morning Sun has landed on his face. He uses his hand to cover his eyes. After a moment, he could feel his body changing slowly. It was as if he was shedding from a shell; and because of that, he grinned. Under the Sun, he appears to glow.

He decides to go and take a look at Guan Shan Jue. When he got to him, he pulls the thin blanket up and covers Guan Shan Jue's shoulder. He smiled, his Stepfather definitely looked much better.

Stretching his back, Xuan Luo looked outside, murmuring, "I wonder why Li ye ye asked to see me?"

He thought about it, and left the room, headed to Master Li's building....

## Chapter 4 The Six Big Clans

When Xuan Luo arrived at the Martial Arts building, he saw Master Li practicing a set of fist technique in the main hall. Hence, Xuan Luo did not disturb him. He found a spot to sit close by while he waited for Master Li to complete his set.

Under normal circumstances, one should never disturb a martial artist while he is in practice. If a martial artist's qi is distracted while practicing xin fa, he could lose control of his body and turn crazy. Although Master Li wasn't practicing xin fa at the moment, it was still better to take caution.

So, Xuan Luo did not dare to utter a word, and quietly watched as Master Li practiced. When Master Li was finished, he stood up and asked, "Li ye ye, why did you want to see me?"

Master Li lightly wipes the sweats from his forehead and firmly looks at him. "Xuan Luo, do you want to learn Martial Arts in a traditional manner?"

Master Li was very direct. Xuan Luo is at a loss for words. He is confused. He knows Master Li's skills are limited, but then, why is he asking him that? He is unclear of his intentions.

Looking at Master Li, he stammered, "Li ye ye, you...are...asking me..."

Seeing Xuan Luo's reaction, Master Li smiled. "Xuan Luo, I saw how you fought that man. I think you have a talent for Martial Arts."

Xuan Luo does not know how he should respond. He is more alert and worried now. He thought Master Li could tell that he has been secretly practicing xin fa on his own.

"Haha!" Master Li laughed. He didn't explain in further details. "I'm still half of a jiang hu zhong ren. I had some talent, but people from my Clan got jealous of me. That's why I ended up like this."

Master Li sighed. He looked at Xuan Luo, "Your path definitely will not end at Qian Deng Zhen. Since I have some time now, I'm going to tell you some things. Plus, I'm old. I don't even know how many years I have left..."

"Li ye ye, what do you mean?" Xuan Luo kind of realizes that Master Li wants to tell him how to live, but also about his past as well.

The truth is, Master Li was a very talented young man. At that time, the leader of his Clan noticed him and gave him a lot of attention. But it was also because of this attention that made many people jealous of him. Many kept setting him up, and by the time he was in his 20s, Master Li's path to the fighting world was over. All his jing mai were broken, and his dream to practice Martial Arts were destroyed. Getting revenge was pretty much impossible. Even simply being a normal person, he faced many obstacles.

Thus, Master Li is only able to practice some shallow kung fu. But although his kung fu does not require nei li, it can still do some damage. So, Master Li entirely practices Martial Arts to keep his body strong.



As Master Li talks about himself, he keeps sighing. Xuan Luo felt like he understood a lot just from listening to his tone.

Who would have thought that in this small town, the only person who knew some Martial Arts had such a past. Looking at this old man, Xuan Luo was a bit emotional.

"I wanted to ask you..if you had any desire to join a clan.." Master Li's eyes deepened. From his eyes, he released and revealed all the frustrations he had held in from all these years.

"Li ye ye, I..." Xuan Luo wanted to say something, but seeing Master Li's eyes lit up with hope, he did not know how to reject him.

Master Li cuts him off. "Xuan Luo. Originally, I thought I would be living here in this mountainous land for the rest of my life. I did not plan to meddle in anything. But from the moment I saw you defeat that man, I have another wish. And from Qian Deng Zhen, you're the only one who can help me fulfill that wish!"

Master Li puts both his hands on Xuan Luo's shoulder. Bending down, it looks like he is almost begging Xuan Luo. Xuan Luo was not used to this. The way Master Li was beaming at him made it impossible for him to say no.

Thinking back to incident, Xuan Luo was still upset. If he did not happen to practice the xin fa by accident and released his nei li, the man would have beaten Guan Shan Jue to death. Once he thought of that, Xuan Luo firmly said, "Li ye ye, if it is possible, I will join a Clan to practice

higher Martial Arts. After what happened the other day, I know that without ability, I will not be able to protect anyone. I want to protect Stepfather. I don't ever want him to suffer like that again!"

Master Li was very comforted by Xuan Luo's words. He can see that Xuan Luo's eyes are filled with the desire to protect his loved ones. Master Li lightly pats his head and said, "Okay then. I must tell you about the big Clans from our jiang hu!"

Master Li brings Xuan Luo to his room. He tells Xuan Luo to sit down at the table in front of the bed. Then, he sat next to Xuan Luo and softly said, "Xuan Luo, we have a couple big Clans: Wu Dang, Shao Lin, E Mei, Jun Zi Tang, Tang Men, and Luo Cha Men. These Clans are some of the best in our jiang hu. They each have their own martial styles and inner xin fa. Mastery is dependent on your ability though. And of course, there are also other Clans. Some are more powerful than others. But generally, each Clan has their own specialty and influential power in our society. Thus, there are followers for all of them. It just depends on what type of inner xin fa and martial styles you want to learn.

Xuan Luo was still confused by what Master Li was telling him. "So is influential power more important? Or Clan? Do I really have to join a Clan in order to practice higher Martial Arts?"

Looking at Xuan Luo, Master Li laughed. He felt like he was talking to his grandchild. "Every influential power is seen as a powerful owner. But compared to a Clan, there are differences. Clans are able to maintain their spot in our jiang hu even during difficult times. There are times when they might shrink in size though. But influential power is different. Their foundations are not stable. Sometimes, it only takes a few years for a power to be replaced. In addition, there is always a battle within the group. As for Clans, I've never heard of such a thing..."

Xuan Luo nodded. He seems to somewhat understand. At least, compared to before, he understood a lot more.

Master Li continued on, "The six big Clans all possess their own special xin fa. However, Luo Cha Men has a bad reputation. They are seen as an evil Clan. Therefore, don't deal with them!"

Master Li nicely warns Xuan Luo. No one truly knows where Luo Cha Men's headquarters are. And whenever Luo Cha Men is active, it's a catastrophe for everyone. Fortunately, in the past hundred years, Luo Cha Men has become more low key; hence, slowly fading from others' sight.

"Wu Dang aims to use yin to overcome yang. They have high expectations on nei li. Thus, Wu Dang's xin fa is definitely better than the other Clan's. However, their style does not possess strong killing power."

"Shao Lin's xin fa is dependent on a person's physique. They are considered the yang type. Their specialty is sudden explosion of power - suitable for extreme Martial Arts style."

"Gai Bang's xin fa is also considered the yang type. But their level is not as high as Shao Lin, and they are able to attack and defend. Thus, they are more balanced."

"Tang Men's xin fa lean towards the yin side. They are known for using secret weapons. Therefore, they have very high expectations on flexibility."

“Jun Zi Tang’s xin fa is yin for the most part, but also slightly yang. This Clan puts a lot of emphasis on the body and mind. In order to be part of them, you must at least master one of the following: instrument, chess, literature and art.

This is the first time that Xuan Luo has heard so much about these five Clans. Master Li has never brought it up back then. As a result, he is very attentive.

“Then, Li ye ye, if I want to join some Clans, which ones do you think are suitable for me?” Xuan Luo stares widely at Master Li. Every Clan has a certain advantage. Xuan Luo truly doesn’t know which ones to choose. Thus, he wants Master Li’s input.

Master Li laughed. “That will depend on you. Usually, a person can only join one Clan!”

Master paused. Looking at Xuan Luo, he said, “If you are serious about joining a Clan, I would highly suggest you to join Wu Dang because of their specialty.”

Master Li spoke the truth. Wu Dang’s style and xin fa is definitely very unique and special. But deep inside, he also suggested Wu Dang due to his own selfish reasons.

## Chapter 5 Decision

After staying with Master Li for most of the morning, Xuan Luo has a much deeper understanding of jiang hu's different Clans and the power that they hold. But he hasn't made up his mind yet. Although he made a promise to Master Li, it doesn't mean he has to make his decision so soon.

Master Li did not say anything else for the rest of the day, which caused Xuan Luo to feel a little uneasy.

But since Master Li didn't say anything, perhaps it wasn't the right time yet. Hence, he did not dwell on it too much.

When he got home, Guan Shan Jue was already awake. Seeing his Stepfather dragging his old body to do chores, Xuan Luo's eyes watered; his tears silently rolled down his cheeks.

"Stepfather, let me do it." Xuan Luo choked with emotions. He ran to him, grabbing Guan Shan Jue's creased hands; taking the cloth from him.

"Stepfather, go sit down. I can do everything here!" Xuan Luo led Guan Shan Jue to a chair nearby. Then he tidied up the restaurant, wiped the tables and chairs, and placed everything in the right spot. At that moment, Xuan Luo acted like how a son should act -he helped his family share the burden.

Looking at Xuan Luo, Guan Shan Jue feels a type of love he could not

explain. Guan Shan Jue has no child of his own, so he sees Xuan Luo as his child in every way.

*cough* Guan Shan Jue could not hold in his cough. Xuan Luo was very worried and quickly stopped what he was doing. He rushes to Guan Shan Jue's side and lightly pats his Stepfather's back.

"Are you alright, Stepfather?" Xuan Luo asked with concern. He could tell Guan Shan Jue has loved him all these years; and it's because of his unconditional love that has led him to speak again. When Xuan Luo first met Guan Shan Jue, he could not speak.

"I'm fine...much better." said Guan Shan Jue. He smiled. Guan Shan Jue is simply a kind hearted man who generally never gets angry. He is a very approachable type of person.

Xuan Luo cannot recall his past. All the memories that had occurred before he was eight years old were locked up by him. Those memories were like a curse. Each time he thought about it, he would feel a sense of dread for some reason. As a result, locking them up was the best way to stop the fear.

Slowly, after Xuan Luo locked up his memory, he began to adapt to his new home. He had his Stepfather and Bai Tian. Everything was great.

Seeing Xuan Luo, Guan Shan Jue could not hide his smile. His smile is very kind and calming. It is a very heartwarming moment.

Seeing Guan Shan Jue, Xuan Luo is more determined to learn Martial

Arts than ever before. He will not allow anyone close to him to ever suffer again. Not even a bit. He clenched his fists.

Suddenly, Xuan Luo recalled and agreed with what Master Li had said. It's true, in this world, strength is an asset. Although living a simple life is good, it is way too boring. Thus, his mindset is slowly evolving.

"Stepfather, do you think I ought to go see the world?" Xuan Luo has an idea of what he wants. He is ready to discuss it with Guan Shan Jue. Yet, at the same time, if he were to leave on his own, Guan Shan Jue would be alone. He doesn't want to hurt his Stepfather either, but in order to protect him, the only way is to get stronger.

Hearing those words, Guan Shan Jue's heart thumped. Xuan Luo's existence is made his home finally felt like home.

"You're already old enough to make your own choices. You still have to ask me?" Guan Shan Jue pretends to roll his eyes at Xuan Luo; and laughed.

"Haha. I know.."

---

Xuan Luo is the decisive type. Once he has made up his mind, he will not waver. Therefore, since he has decided what to do, he went to find Bai Tian to tell him the news.

"Hey! What are you doing?" He is curious as he sees Bai Tian sitting in

the main hall.

"I heard about your Stepfather! How is he?" Bai Tian asked Xuan Luo. He found out what happened through the villagers. At first, he was very nervous. But when he heard that Xuan Luo totally destroyed the guy, he was ecstatic. It's obvious that their friendship is very strong.

"He's healing quite well!" Xuan Luo smiled, and went in further depth.

Seeing Xuan Luo's expression, Bai Tian grinned. Seeing how Xuan Luo's eyes darkened, Bai Tian lightly shoves his chest. "Wow, now that's something new! When did you become so powerful, huh? You were able to defeat the man? I heard from the villagers that the man is really strong!?! Be honest with me, when did you become so powerful?"

Xuan Luo doesn't know what to say. It's not that he wants to keep the cave story a secret. But each time he is about to say it, the thoughts suddenly disappear; as if it has never happened.

"You must not have practiced Master Li's Martial Arts hard enough. If you did, you could do it too!" Xuan Luo crosses his arms across his chest, pretending to think deeply.

It's not that Xuan Luo wanted to make things up. But in reality, he really could not think of another way to explain himself.

Bai Tian somewhat believes Xuan Luo. After all, Master Li is the only person who knows Martial Arts in the town. It was rumoured that Master Li can defeat a tiger with one hand; hence, he has no choice but to



believe.

"Haha. Why were you looking for me?" Bai Tian asked him straight up.

Xuan Luo smacked his head, "Oh my goodness. All your fault! I almost forgot what I came to say!"

"Master Li thinks I have a talent in Martial Arts. He told me to find a legit teacher to learn from. I was wondering if you would be interested. Maybe we can go together..." Xuan Luo hesitated.

"Haha! That's great! But at our current state, would a Clan accept us? And how much do you know about the Clans? And..." Bai Tian asked a couple more questions in a row, and all of them had a point.

Xuan Luo is speechless. He didn't expect Bai Tian to ask so many questions. Aside from the first few, he has no idea about the rest.

Since he has thick skin, Xuan Luo told Bai Tian everything he has learned from Master Li. As for the other questions, he hastily went through them...

—————

"Xuan Luo. Based on what you said, let's go together then! How can I say no to my best friend? Let's go!" Bai Tian did not even think about it. He agreed once Xuan Luo was finished talking.

---

Time passed by very quickly. A few months has passed. During these few months, whenever Xuan Luo had time, he would meditate and practice the xin fa. Every day, he would feel the nei li increasing in his core. There were moments when he felt like it would spill out.

As always, after Xuan Luo has finished his tasks, he went straight to his room to meditate. The xin fa slowly appeared in his mind, and at the same time, a warm current spreads throughout his body. After awhile, it would stop at the core.

But today was different. The xin fa went through Xuan Luo's body, but the core did not absorb the nei li. In the end, the nei li remained in the jing mai. The nei li scattered throughout Xuan Luo's body, but he didn't feel unwell. Instead, he felt very good. It's as if every cell in his body was jumping for joy.

After practicing, Xuan Luo thought back to what had happened, but couldn't figure it out.

Xuan Luo got up. Based on his routine, he would lift a stone brick a hundred times. The stone brick is very heavy. Master Li was the one who suggested him to lift it. By lifting the stone brick, it would increase his strength. Thus, Xuan Luo somehow found a stone brick, and by the time he was twelve, he already possessed the strength of several hundred jin.

He lifts and lifts. But he realized something was wrong. He puts down the stone brick and is deep in thought.

Back then, even with all his strength, he could only lift the stone block a hundred times. But today, he was able to lift it 300 times!? Xuan Luo is puzzled. Although it is a good thing, it seems so odd.

Actually, it is the nei li from the jing mai that has transformed Xuan Luo's body. The reason why he did not feel anything is because it didn't happen overnight. His body has been changing slowly ever since he had started practicing the xin fa.

Since Xuan Luo couldn't figure it out, he decided to leave it. After all, it's a good thing, so why should he worry?

Today's practice was finally over. Xuan Luo looks up at the sky, his eyes are filled with sorrow. But it cannot be helped. What's to come, will come!

## Chapter 6 Departure

### Martial Arts building

It is late in the evening. Xuan Luo went to the Martial Arts' building on his own. He had promised Master Li that before he left, he would come here. Master Li has something to say to him.

"Li ye ye, are you here?" Inside the main hall, he doesn't see anyone. Although the building wasn't considered big, a dozen or so can practice at the same time.

Seeing the empty place, Xuan Luo thought to himself, did I go to the wrong location? But then again, that's not possible.

Since no one was around, he decided to practice his shallow fist techniques in the main hall.

Although these shallow movements were basic; sometimes, the most simple techniques were the most useful.

Xuan Luo practiced while waiting for Master Li to appear. But after practicing for his 7th or 8th time, Master Li was still nowhere to be seen.

He decided to go home.

By now, the moon was already way high up; surrounded by stars. Everything looked very still.

Xuan Luo looked up at the sky and sighed, "Stepfather, I am leaving tomorrow..."

"Xuan Luo, you're here!" Master Li calls out, as he sees Xuan Luo leaving. He had just arrived back to the building.

"I had to do something. That's why I'm late. Hope you weren't waiting for too long!"

"Don't worry about it, Li ye ye. I'm planning to secretly leave tomorrow. I'm just wondering why you wanted to see me before I go?" rushed Xuan Luo. Originally, he wanted to leave tonight with Bai Tian. But it's already too late, thus he is feeling anxious.

"Come inside with me!" Master Li waves Xuan Luo in and goes inside the building.

When they were inside, Master Li throws Xuan Luo a book that came from nowhere. "This is a book on hanging fist techniques. I wrote this down last night. I used to practice this as well, but this technique doesn't have much power unless you're able to use nei li. That's why after I got hurt, I wasn't able to practice it again. The shallow techniques I have taught you is a shorten and simpler version of this. This is the original."

Xuan Luo catches the book; his mouth opened wide. How can Master Li

give him such a valuable book so easily?!

Seeing Xuan Luo's expression, Master Li smiled. "These moves from the book will be useful to you. Once you get out there, this is another item that might save your life!"

Master Li's caring tone caused a warm sensation in Xuan Luo's heart.

"As you know, some people in our jiang hu are very dangerous. You have to be careful. By the way, when you arrive at Wu Dang, if you see someone named Xiao Yun, please tell him this..." Master Li whispers in Xuan Luo's ears.

"Okay. If I see him, I will pass your message to him!"

———

It was a very quiet and peaceful night in Qian Deng Zhen. Aside from the chirping insects, there were no other sounds.

Although all the lanterns were lit, it isn't as glamorous as one would imagine. When the Sun is up, people work. When the Sun sets, people rest. That's how things work here.

By the time Xuan Luo arrived home, it was already midnight. Guan Shan Jue had gone to bed long ago. Xuan Luo silently looked at Guan Shan Jue's wrinkled face. His heart is filled with longing and he doesn't want to leave. But, there's no other choice. Seeing his Stepfather injured was like getting stabbed in the heart. It was that moment when he decided he

must get stronger...

He actually did not have to pack. He just wanted to see Guan Shan Jue one more time.

Very gently, he shuts the door.

"Are you leaving now?" Hearing the voice, Xuan Luo's body froze.

Guan Shan Jue slowly walked out; his eyes filled with longing. But at the same time, the longing is filled with love -even though Xuan Luo is not his actual son.

"Stepfather...you're awake.." Xuan Luo quietly said.

The two of them looked at each other. The moonlight became the background, and at that moment, those two were the main characters of the Heaven and Earth.

"Haha. Wow, you're planning to leave without a word? You want me to look for you outside on the streets tomorrow?" Guan Shan Jue looked slightly angry, but there was no hint of anger in his voice. He smiled at Xuan Luo.

"Stepfather.." Xuan Luo was tongue tied. He didn't know what to say, and continued looking at Stepfather.

"Stay and talk to me.." Guan Shan Jue grabbed Xuan Luo's hand and

walked back into the room.

-----

They spoke for a long time. But since his Stepfather is old, soon he fell asleep on him.

Xuan Luo didn't move. Seeing his Stepfather fall asleep on his leg, it reminded him of the time when he used to fall asleep on Guan Shan Jue's leg too. His tears fell on Guan Shan Jue's stomach...

That night felt very long. Underneath the candlelight, their shadows were also stretched very long...

Soon, Xuan Luo also closed his eyes, and fell asleep...

"Hot...it's so hot, where...where am I? FIRE. Everything is on fire! What happened to everyone else...?"

Xuan Luo has seen this image many times. Everything is ablaze. He's alone, looking at what's happening in front of him. Too afraid to move. But a dark shadow flashes by and takes him away...

The image has changed. Xuan Luo is now alone in a strange and unfamiliar place. Darkness surrounds him. There is no one else except his shadow...

Where..where am I?



Who...who am I?

What ...what happened?

.....

Xuan Luo's eyes looked dull and lifeless. He kept repeating these questions...

At that moment, he was suddenly aware. His eyes were able to focus again. Standing from his spot, his lips moved. His voice raised.

"I am...Xuan Yuan ...Xuan....Luo.."

-----

The sky has turned white. When Xuan Luo opened his eyes, Guan Shan Jue was nowhere to be seen.

As he walked on the limestone path, he looked back at the two wooden buildings. Xuan Luo experiences a feeling he cannot describe. He doesn't know how to describe it, except that it made his heart feel sour.

When he arrived at the Village's entrance, he waited for a bit. He was disappointed. This is where he is supposed to meet Bai Tian, but he hasn't appeared.

Perhaps it was because of the fire from his dreams. He had always locked up his inner thoughts. It takes a lot to get close to him. So once he allows a person in, that person will always have a special place inside his heart...

Since Bai Tian didn't show up, Xuan Luo decided to leave on his own.

Within a few steps, he hears a voice, "You're leaving without me!? Hey!"

Xuan Luo stopped and turned around; looking at the figure that is approaching him. He smiled.

"Are you sure about this? Did you tell your family?"

"No. If I told them, I wouldn't be able to join you! You didn't say anything either, right?" Bai Tian curiously looked at him.

He shook his head, "No, but Stepfather already knows..."

There was no need to say anything else. The two of them looked at each other and smiled, and started to head East.

The sound of water flows by. On the bridge, we can see the shadow of the two similar heights, slowly stretching.

Following the direction of the Sun, Xuan Luo thought to himself, "I must pursue my own goals. And the things from my dreams..."

Somewhere, Guan Shan Jue watches as Xuan Luo leaves. Tears would not stop rolling down. But all of a sudden, he realized something. "Damn it! I didn't give Xuan Luo that thing!!"

But by now, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian were long gone...

# Chapter 1 The rescue

Qian Deng Zhen is surrounded by mountains. As a result, the villagers did not care much about what was going on outside of their town. Some would go as far and say that they were a separate land of joy and happiness.

However, it was still possible to leave Qian Deng Zhen and go to different major cities. Thus, Xuan Luo decided to go to the nearest major city, Du Cheng. He wanted to find out more information from there. Although Master Li told him a lot, it was far from enough. Ever since Master Li was injured, he pretty much stayed in Qian Deng Zhen. Things change all the time, and sometimes things change all of a sudden.

Along their way, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian admired the scenery and enjoyed the soft blow of the wind.

"We've been walking for so long. When are we going to arrive in Du Cheng?" They had walked for half a day already. Bai Tian raised his head and looked up at the Sun; it was noon.

"I think we're almost there. After we go through these woods, we should arrive." said Xuan Luo. However, this is also the first time Xuan Luo has left Qian Deng Zhen. He doesn't know the exact directions either. He is just saying for the sake of it. Once, he had decided to go up the mountains -but ended up getting lost. This time, he doesn't really have a plan either. He is only following his heart. In the back of his mind, everything will work out in the end. At least they are heading towards the

direction of Du Cheng.

In all honesty, Qian Deng Zhen is surrounded by mountains. No one really knows what's on the other side. An example would be Luo Cun. The people there are also very simple minded. The people would not leave their village either. They are satisfied with what they have. Their days were simple, happy, and free.

Xuan Luo was in a very good mood, with both his hands holding his head, he casually headed towards his destination.

At that moment, he heard something. It was weak, but it was still there. Thus, Xuan Luo turned around and asked Bai Tian, "Did you hear that?"

Bai Tian shook his head. Along their way, they heard a lot of noise from the wind blowing. So, Xuan Luo must be talking about something else.

Since Bai Tian didn't hear anything, Xuan Luo thought he must have been mistaken. Hence, he let go of the thought and continued on. But as they kept walking, the noise started getting louder and louder. Finally, Xuan Luo turned around and said, "I think something is happening up ahead!"

Xuan Luo ran towards the noise. Without knowing, he unleashed a bu fa and within a few steps, he was already a couple meters away. Bai Tian rubbed his eyes and stared in astonishment.

It turned out Xuan Luo was correct about the noise. His nei gong xin fa allowed him to perceive things further away. Although his core had

already been filled with nei li, each time he practiced the xin fa, his nei li still continued to increase. The overflowing nei li started spreading throughout his body; and his body started changing. Not only has his strength increased, his hearing and sight has also been affected as well...

"Running away, eh?! Let's see how far you can run! Watch me break your leg!" A wretched looking man cruelly hollered at a young girl.

Xuan Luo saw the man from a distance. The man looked familiar, but he couldn't figure out why.

"Get away from me...please...get away from me..." The girl sobbed. Watching the man, the girl was clearly terrified.

This girl looked like she was approximately ten years old or so. Her hair was a big mess, and the soil on her face was still fresh. For some reason, her clothes were all torn as well.

The vulgar man disregarded what the girl said. Bending his waist, he ran towards the girl with a smirk on his face.

The girl began to turn around and tried to run away. But within a few seconds, the man had grabbed hold of her with one hand.

"Haha. Trying to run, eh? You can't run anymore!" The man laughed.

Realizing she was caught, the girl's face immediately turned pale. It really was so difficult to escape, within two steps, she was already caught. She tried to break free, but it was no use. Boys generally have more

strength than girls. But this is not even a boy she was dealing with. He was a man. How can a small girl like herself escape from his strong grip?

Although Xuan Luo wasn't exactly clear of what had happened, he immediately stepped forward. "Let go of this girl now!"

Hearing his voice, the girl started to look hopeful; as if she found a herb that could save her life. But when she saw that Xuan Luo was probably around her age, all her hope went out the window.

The wretched man looked at Xuan Luo, frowning, "Oh, it's you!?"

Xuan Luo finally realized why the man looked familiar. He was the same man who had beaten Guan Shan Jue from the restaurant. All his anger came back.

"Aahahaha.. oh.. it's you. I didn't expect you. Enemies on such a narrow road (idiom)" As he spoke, he twisted his neck; ready for action.

At the time, Xuan Luo was so furious that he did not care who his opponent was. All he saw was his Stepfather's blood, and it raised his potential to the highest.

"That's exactly what I wanted to say. You little doll. I still remember what you did to me. Now that you found me, I'm going to get my revenge!"

Although they said different things, their intentions were the same. Neither of them planned to let the other one go freely.

Without thinking, Xuan Luo lifted his fist and charged at the man. In the past few months, his body has definitely leveled up. His xin fa had definitely helped a lot. If he cannot beat his opponent, he can still run away...

The man looked at Xuan Luo and laughed. That day, he was too careless. If he wasn't, he wouldn't have been beaten. It took him a month to heal. Due to pride, he didn't tell anyone about what happened.

"Today, I'm going to destroy you!" The man loudly screeched, and charged at Xuan Luo.

Although they were both using fists, there was a pattern and rhythm to the man's hits. Xuan Luo recalled some of the styles from the book Master Li had given him. Different combinations create different outcomes. Thus, Xuan Luo could tell right away that this man was skillful. He was also thankful that the man was careless that day, since he only knew how to strike and block.

But Xuan Luo has improved dramatically since then. At the time, his strength was about a couple dozen jin. But now, his strength is at least a couple hundred jin. It's definitely incomparable.



## Chapter 2 Hand it over

Xuan Luo's attacking sequence was far too simple. If it weren't for his nei li, he would not be able to fight back at all.

He was not born with God-like power, and since he was only thirteen years old, his strength was limited. But for the past couple of days, the overflowing nei li has spread throughout his body. Hence, it has silently raised his strength.

But Xuan Luo does not know any fighting style. Although Master Li gave him a book, he barely had time to go through it. That is why he could only use simple fist moves. But his simple techniques were quite useless. The man's style was way too intense. The man moved like the cloud and water (idiom). The stress on Xuan Luo increased substantially. It's as if the man wanted to get rid of his shame (how he was defeated from before). Facing Xuan Luo, the man was giving it his all.

Bang.

After just a few rounds, Xuan Luo was struck and crashed into a nearby tree.

Xuan Luo's face redden. He did not expect the man to have so much strength. Likewise, he never thought he would be unable to fight back.

Each time he was about to get hit, he tried to block. But that hasn't worked out very well; because the moment he makes a move, his

opponent's fist changes again. Xuan Luo couldn't even see what was happening; that is why he got beaten so badly.

"Ha! You think you can defeat me? I, Hu Han, have never been afraid of anyone. You're just a doll. If I wasn't careless last time, you would have never won!" Hu Han sneered at Xuan Luo. His tone was full of arrogance.

The fallen Xuan Luo struggled to get up. But that doesn't mean he has given up. Since practicing nei li, he has become much stronger.

There is a very clear line between Martial Artists who have nei li and those who don't. Many of those who are able to cultivate nei li becomes jiang hu's powerful people.

Not everyone can cultivate nei li though. It depends on one's innate talent. Without the innate ability, it wouldn't matter how many thousands of nei gong xin fa books are in front of you. The spells would be like garbage, because there would be no impact.

Xuan Luo stared at Hu Han; thinking, if only I could come up with a full sequence, then I can definitely change the outcome.

But he had only briefly skimmed through the book Master Li had given him. He could use it, but first of all, he definitely lacked the practice; and secondly, even if did he use it, his opponent could probably see right through it and defeat him.

At this moment, though, he didn't have any other choice. It's either do or die.

Xuan Luo closed his eyes. The sequences flashed through his mind. In his mind, there appeared to be a person showing him each and every move.

He is standing still. He is trying to figure out which moves he should lead with and how he could break his opponent's sequence. Within a matter of seconds, Xuan Luo opened his eyes again.

Hu Han was still standing at the same spot. Seeing Xuan Luo on the ground, he had lost the golden opportunity to strike. From now on, he no longer has an advantage.

With great speed, Xuan Luo charged at Hu Han. His fist knows what to do now; it has come alive.

Hu Han was shocked by Xuan Luo's sudden outburst. He takes a step back and quickly tries to block.

Although the quan fa only flashed through Xuan Luo's mind, his foundation in Martial Arts was very good. Hence, he was able to quickly get into the right mindset to fight.

Gradually, his attacks became faster and faster. Hu Han's defence was getting weaker and weaker.

Bang.

Xuan Luo struck Hu Han with an uppercut and he flew. The fist was powered by nei li, and it was much more powerful than before...

Hu Han spat out a mouthful of fresh blood. He looked at Xuan Luo in disbelief. Originally he thought he was just careless, but now, there was only astonishment in his eyes.

Hu Han is in his thirties. He has been in jiang hu for quite some time now. There are things that he can see very clearly, and at this moment, he could only describe Xuan Luo as a genius.

A witch or devil type of genius. Hu Han doesn't want to admit it, but that is what it seems like to him.

If Xuan Luo was capable of such sequence, why didn't he use it earlier? Why was Xuan Luo using such simple attacks before? He didn't show any of this beforehand. Is he hiding something? Or...

No. It's not possible.

He's probably just a genius.

At this moment, a laughter echoed through the air. "Haha! Hu Han! I was wondering who it was that defeated you? It's this little boy, eh? Your skills must have deteriorated!"

Hearing the laughter, Xuan Luo's face immediately darkened. Although he couldn't tell whether it was a foe or friend; based on his context, the man is probably part of Hu Han's group.

As he came closer, Xuan Luo could see that the man is also in his thirties. He looked similar to Hu Han, but his physique was far more superior.

The man approached Xuan Luo and jeered, "You little doll. You have quite some power. You managed to beat Han lao san! Bright future ahead of you!"

The man patted Xuan Luo on the shoulder; his face was still wearing a smile. But Xuan Luo doesn't feel the same. Although the pat appeared to be light and friendly, it actually hurt his shoulder. If his physique had not improved, he would have fallen apart.

"You...you are part of his group?" Xuan Luo asked the man. His eyes showed no signs of weakness.

"Ha!" The man laughed. "I guess so! He is my younger brother. But, I do see a lot of potential in you. Your quan fa is quite profound!"

Xuan Luo knows what he wants now. This man wants his quan fa.

"If you hand me the quan fa book, I'll let you go! If not..." The man intently stares at Xuan Luo.

Just as he had expected...

Xuan Luo absolutely hates being threatened. Since he is only thirteen,

he isn't exactly mature yet. Things can easily irritate him.

"Ha! You think I would hand it over? If you want to fight, then fight!" Xuan Luo said angrily. With a back flip, he separated a distance between him and the man.

## Chapter 3 Ling Hu Jiu

What Xuan Luo said thoroughly angered the man. How dare he, a mere child, say that to him in such a harsh tone?

He looked at Xuan Luo with disdain and headed straight for an attack.

Xuan Luo had already endured a lot of injuries from his fight with Hu Han. Not to mention, the quan fa from Master Li was only possible due to his insight. He is rusty, and needs to practice. In addition, this man is also a lot more powerful compared to Hu Han. Hence, he is in big trouble.

With great speed, the man headed straight for him. With a blink of an eye, he is already behind Xuan Luo. Xuan Luo is baffled.

The man whips his leg behind Xuan Luo's back and causes Xuan Luo to spin through the air. After a few twirls, he lands on the ground. Blood spills out from the corner of Xuan Luo's mouth and his face turns white. At this moment, he has no strength whatsoever.

At this moment, an echo of laughter was suddenly heard through the sky. "Ha ha ha ha! Who would have thought, the 2nd dang jia, Shang Hua, would pick on someone so young? Aren't you ashamed of yourself?" The laughter was very sharp and crafty; it gave the listener an unique feeling.

Hearing her voice, Shang Hua and Hu Han's face expression immediately changed. Actually, Shang Hua was somewhat fine, but Hu Han was not; this woman was a powerful lady.

This woman is Dong Fang Yu. She has some type of influential power in Qian Deng Zhen, but she doesn't care much for fame or power. She has her own restaurant business, and it's doing quite well. It is considered one of the more well known restaurants around Qian Deng Zhen (and maybe even in Du Cheng).

"Haha. Oh, it's Miss Dong Fang? What brings you to this mountainous field?" Shang Hua asked; he has already recovered from his shock.

"This doesn't look like Shen Tui Men's territory either? But even if it is, I can come whenever I want. What are you going to do about it?" Dong Fang Yu laughed. As she laughed, she covered her mouth with her hands; only her eyes were revealed.

Any man would be mesmerized by her.

Xuan Luo stared admirably at Dong Fang Yu.

"Beautiful...too beautiful!" Xuan Luo thought to himself.

Shang Hua must admit, Dong Fang Yu was definitely a beauty. But since he was an adult, he was able to somewhat disregard her beauty and look straight into her eyes, "This is my family issues. Please don't butt in!"

Shang Hua was sincere, but it didn't matter to Dong Fang Yu.

"You, Sheng Tui Men, are in my territory behaving badly. Do you



honestly think I would let you go so easily?" Dong Fang Yu raised her eyebrows, looking slightly irritated.

Sheng Tui Men energetically settled in Qian Deng Zhen last year. Originally, most parts of Qian Deng Zhen belonged to Dong Fan Yu; but Sheng Tui Men's arrival has threatened her business. Most importantly, Sheng Tui Men's actions are very aggressive. It's as if they want to be the King of the land. A mountain cannot have two tigers (idiom-It pretty much means, there cannot be two owners/powerful leaders in a certain area. Only one can rule.). Although Dong Fang Yu didn't care about that so much, she will definitely not allow her villagers to get picked on.

Dong Fang Yu leaps in the air and pushes her palm on Shang Hua's chest. Shang Hua's body immediately slid backwards. Although Dong Fang Yu's hand looked gentle, it consisted of nei li.

"Ha. Tell Lu Han Shan I don't ever want to see people from Sheng Tui Men in my territory picking on my people. If I do, I'm going to pay you guys a visit!" Dong Fang Yu's tone was heavy. She was definitely serious.

"Dong Fang Yu. I am not going to forget this!" Shang Hua angrily looks at Dong Fang Yu. He cannot outfight her, thus, he has no choice but to let go.

Hu Han and Shang Hua leave, but from their eyes, it was obvious that they wanted vengeance.

Xuan Luo continued to stare at Dong Fang Yu. But his eyes indicated his pure intentions. Looking at Dong Fang Yu, Xuan Luo said, "Jie Jie, you are so beautiful!"

Hearing this, Dong Fang Yu turns around and takes a look. She realizes that Xuan Luo's eyes were clear and innocent; unlike those who normally looked at her like a prey.

Dong Fang Yu helped Xuan Luo up. Smiling, she said, "Wow, little guy! You're quite brave. You dare to fight with them? You have a bright future ahead of you!"

Dong Fang Yu was being sarcastic, but Xuan Luo didn't realize it. He thought Dong Fang Yu was praising him. Foolishly, he smiled and shook his head, "Nah..."

Dong Fang Yu didn't know what to say. Children sure like to be praised...

"Oh yeah, why are you here?" She suddenly asked.

I want to go to Du Cheng and hear/learn more about the different Clans. I want to learn Martial Arts and get a proper Master!" Xuan Luo smiled and responded without a thought.

"Haha! Wow, you are a brave and righteous soul. I have a friend in Du Cheng. You can go find him. Just tell him I'm the one who sent you!" Dong Fang Yu gave Xuan Luo an address.

"Thank you, jie jie.."Xuan Luo is thankful. At least, now he has someone to turn to.

Xuan Luo suddenly remembered the girl he had saved. The girl had not said a word. The girl doesn't look too pleased as she stared at Xuan Luo and Dong Fang Yu. She stares intently at Xuan Luo, and then turns away.

"Okay then. I'm going to go now. If you need anything else, come find me in the restaurant!"

Dong Fang Yu's smile was very beautiful. Xuan Luo looked spellbound as he stared at Dong Fang Yu's figure (it sound so inappropriate when I translate this, but he's just looking at her walk away)...

"Hey! You saved me. You are responsible for me now!!!" The little girl said to Xuan Luo. Her pout was very cute. Although her face was dirty and her clothes were torn, one can see that the girl was a pretty one.

"Ah... what are you saying?" Xuan Luo was shocked.

Responsible? Is she nuts?

Although Xuan Luo is only thirteen, he does understand what she means. He cannot believe the girl would ask that of him.

Suddenly, the bush nearby swayed, and out hopped a person. Looking at Xuan Luo, he loudly said, "What are you doing?!"

The person was Bai Tian. He saw Xuan Luo running straight ahead; after chasing for half a day, he has finally caught up to him. But the moment he popped out, Xuan Luo was very close to the girl's face.

Xuan Luo recognized that voice. He gets up and turns around, smiling in Bai Tian's direction.

"What took you so long?!" He almost risked his life, and Bai Tian was nowhere to be seen! But seeing Bai Tian now, he cannot help but smile.

"What were you two about to do?!?!" Bai Tian points his finger at the girl next to Xuan Luo, then he made both his thumbs bend towards each other.

Right away, Xuan Luo realized what Bai Tian's hand gesture meant. "It's not you think! Come on, let's go. Let's try to get to Du Cheng before it gets dark..."

"Okay. Let's go!"

They seem to have forgotten about the girl as they linked shoulders heading forward.

"Hey! Don't leave me behind!" The girl loudly calls. She gets up and follows Xuan Luo and Bai Tian.

"Hey, little girl, what's your name?" Bai Tian asked.

"Ling Hu Jiu!"

"Oh...why are you here?"

"Why can't I be here? I came out to play!"

"Uh..whatever. Let's go!"

Looking at Bai Tian, Xuan Luo was speechless. He doesn't know what to think. Oh well, with the inclusion of Ling Hu Jiu, the trip became a lot more interesting (because she talks a lot)...

## Chapter 4 Tong Fu Inn

"We've finally arrived!" Xuan Luo said loudly as he looked at the entrance wall of Du Cheng. They went through quite a lot to get here. Now that they have arrived, he is almost speechless.

"I'm tired to death! We're finally here!" Bai Tian commented next to him.

Ling Hu Jiu looks up at the word "Du Cheng" and looked lost in thought. From her eyes, there appeared to be a little bit hope, but more so, sadness. She hid it quite well though. Xuan Luo and Bai Tian did not seem to notice.

As they entered the city, Xuan Luo was amazed by the flourishing sight. It was already late at night, yet there were so many people everywhere. Noises could be heard from all around, and people were roaming around the streets like it was daytime. It did not feel like night at all.

As they walked along the lit path, the group curiously looked at both sides of the road.

Xuan Luo has never been to Du Cheng. He honestly doesn't know where this path will lead him. But Dong Fang Yu mentioned that her friend opened a small store here. Thus, Xuan Luo decided to find the store.

Underneath the lanterns, the streets looked extremely ancient. The busy crowd made the mood extremely exciting.

They walked and stopped. Xuan Luo and Bai Tian were extremely curious with everything. They acted like children; although, they were still considered children. They've never seen anything like this before. The furthest they have ever gone was the woods near Qian Deng Zhen.

Looking straight ahead, they see a big sign that says "Tong Fu Inn".

Xuan Luo was surprised. He did not expect to find their destination so easily. It was just around the public square.

Thinking back to what Dong Fang Yu said..."a small store"... Xuan Luo was shocked. If "Tong Fu Inn" is considered a small store, then there must be no big stores in Du Cheng!

Xuan Luo laughed at himself. Clearly, he lacked experience.

Xuan Luo and Bai Tian walked to the entrance of the Inn. A waiter loudly welcomed them. "Ke guan, are you stopping for snack or looking for a stay?"

The man had a crooked back and a long towel around his shoulder. He approached Xuan Luo with a smile on his face.

Xuan Luo wasn't sure how to respond to the waiter. He decided to politely ask, "Da ge, is boss Zhang here?"

The waiter was caught off guard. But he smiled and responded, "Xiao xiong di, please wait!"

Although Xuan Luo was only thirteen, he was seven che tall. His body looked fit and strong. Based on his physique, no one would be able to tell his actual age. However, from his face, we can still see that he is young and fresh.

"Zhang zhang gui, someone is looking for you!" The waiter called out.

It was late at night. There weren't many guests in the Inn. Most had already finished eating and gone on their way. Hence, only a handful were still drinking tea and conversing amongst themselves.

Hearing the waiter, the Inn keeper stopped what he was doing at the counter. He headed outside and asked, "Xiao xiong di, you're looking for me?" He smiled.

Xuan Luo was very polite. He bowed slightly and said, "Dong Fang jie jie told me to come here. She said if I have any issues, I can come to you."

The Inn keeper immediately welcomed Xuan Luo in. He told the waiter to prepare a room for him and his friend.

Xuan Luo didn't realized Dong Fang Yu's words would be so useful. He didn't think much of it, and went inside with Bai Tian.



Ling Hu Jiu was shocked. Based on the Inn's decor, a regular person would not be able to afford to stay here.

As she was about to follow Xuan Luo into the Inn, a different waiter stopped her. "You little beggar. Leave now ! Don't you dare affect our business!"

It's not really the waiter's fault. Ling Hu Jiu's clothes were all torn. Her face had mud on it, and her hair was as messy as a stack of hay. She looked no different than a street beggar.

"Xuan Luo ge! Bai Tian ge! Tell him to let me in!" Ling Hu Jiu hollered. But sadly, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian were already inside. They could not hear her.

"Stop yelling. Zhang gui is busy dealing with his guests. How would they know a beggar like you?" The waiter looked at Ling Hu Jiu with disgust. "Get out!"

The Inn keeper led Xuan Luo and Bai Tian to a private room and prepared a few dishes. He looked at Xuan Luo and asked, "Does Dong Fang xiao jie have any orders for me?"

Xuan Luo couldn't think. His mind is spinning; Dong Fang Yu is that powerful?

But he quickly composed himself.

"Zhang gui, no need to be so courteous. I just happened to come by Du

Cheng. I want to know more about the different Clans. You don't have to treat me like an important guest!"

"Haha. Have your meal first. The room has already been prepared for you. You can head there to rest afterwards." The Inn keeper smiled. Dong Fang Yu is definitely his boss. But he is a little puzzled to see these two lads in front of him.

Outside the Inn, Ling Hu Jiu is a bit depressed. She is also a human. Why is it that Xuan Luo and Bai Tian could go in, but she couldn't?

Sitting on one side, she pouted. Her face showed her misery. Someone was watching the door, and she couldn't slip in...

She sighed. "Why is there such a big difference?"

Since she can't go in, she must think of another solution!

—

The Inn keeper's warm welcome made Xuan Luo and Bai Tian feel very sorry (due to inconvenience). But that cannot be helped. Dong Fang Yu is the boss of this place. The moment Xuan Luo mentioned her name, the Inn keeper was anxious; he definitely had to treat her guests well.

After their stomachs were full, realization suddenly struck Xuan Luo and Bai Tian and they looked at each other. The same question popped into their eyes.

"Where is Ling Hu Jiu mei zi?"

They both asked the same question.

But then they envisioned Ling Hu Jiu and her attire. She looked like a beggar. Thinking back, she must have been stopped.

Bai Tian loudly chuckled. He could imagine Ling Hu Jiu's sunken face.

Along their way to Du Cheng, Ling Hu Jiu was very quick witted. She would torment Bai Tian occasionally. Thus, Bai Tian feels great as he imagines Ling Hu Jiu's grumpy expression.

Xuan Luo doesn't care. Ling Hu Jie is too whiny. And the things she says are ridiculous. Just because he saved her, she expects him to take responsibility of her. What the heck. Things like that are not supposed to happen so fast?

----

On the streets, Ling Hu Jiu was happy and at ease. Although she couldn't get inside with Xuan Luo and Bai Tian, she feels awesome.

"Ahh.. So full!" She rubs her stomach and yawns.

"Catch that beggar! How dare she steals from me!?! " A young man pointed his finger at Ling Hu Jiu and roared.

Seeing the situation, Ling Hu Jiu ran. If she doesn't run now, then when?

Amongst the people, a black figure speedily flashed by. It was Ling Hu Jiu...

"Haha. You want to capture me? You're still too soft!" Ling Hu Jiu escaped and giggled.

At this moment, she felt someone tapped her shoulder. She turned around immediately, but was almost scared to death.

"Hi!" Ling Hu Jiu waved to the man behind her. Then, she ran.

## Chapter 5 Trouble Maker

Tong Fu Inn's accommodations were very good. That night, Xuan Luo slept very well.

In the morning, the waiter came to wake them up. It wasn't his job, but zhang gui told him that he had to treat the guests extra well.

"Gong zi, did you sleep well last night?" The Inn keeper asked Xuan Luo.

"Yes. Thank you, zhang gui! There's something I want to ask you though." Xuan Luo finally decided to bring it up, after thinking thoroughly about it.

"What is it, gong zi?" Zhang zhang gui politely asked. (Normally, calling someone "gong zi" is a sign of respect)

Xuan Luo is used to this treatment by now.

"If I want to get into one of the six big Clans, what is the process?" Xuan Luo questioned. Leaving his hometown, his main purpose was to find a good Clan to follow.

The Inn keeper pondered for awhile. "I am aware of the six big Clans, but I'm unsure of how they recruit students."

"I see. Can you tell me all that you know?"

"All I know is that Wu Dang is the closest to us. Exit from the West doors and go through a couple of mountains. You will then arrive at Wu Dang's mountain border. But the path is quite far, and the roads are all mountainous. A carriage will not be able to go through."

Xuan Luo looked down and was deep in thought. Master Li had mentioned that Wu Dang has superior gong fa. In addition, it is relatively close to Du Cheng. Thus, he decided to hesitate no more. Wu Dang it is.

"May I ask you for the exact directions?" Xuan Luo respectfully asked.

"I'm afraid I cannot help you with this. A commoner like myself would not know where Wu Dang is. But once in awhile, I've heard that some people from Wu Dang would come down from the mountain. I've never seen it for myself though." The Inn keeper felt slightly awkward, as he was unable to respond to Xuan Luo's questions.

"Thank you so much, zhang gui!"

---

Du Cheng's morning was very different from its night. At night, it was filled with glamorous lights. In the morning, it was surrounded by merchants.

"Bai Tian. We have to figure out how to get to Wu Dang on our own. There's no other solution." Xuan Luo cannot think of any other way. Zhang gui seemed to be clueless. Originally, he thought he would figure out how to get to Wu Dang when he arrived at Du Cheng. But it didn't go as smoothly as he thought it would.

"Just go with the flow. We cannot tell what's going to happen." Bai Tian said lightly. He's not worried at all.

"Hey, look! Isn't that Ling Hu Jiu?" Suddenly, Bai Tian pointed straight ahead. A group of beggars have surrounded Ling Hu Jiu. They can't tell what happened though.

"I think so. Let's go take a look!" Xuan Luo decided.

———

Ling Hu Jiu was on a remote street. She is standing in the middle; surrounded by a group of beggars. It looked like there was a sort of misunderstanding.

As Xuan Luo and Bai Tian approached, Ling Hu Jiu was grabbed by a young boy and pressed against the wall. The boy was around ten or so. Compared to Xuan Luo, he definitely looked much younger.

The shove caused Ling Hu Jiu to turn red.

"What are you guys doing?" Xuan Luo loudly yelled. Seeing Ling Hu Jiu in this situation, he felt a little heartache. Her face was flushed. It is an

indication that her breathing was not so smooth.

Hearing Xuan Luo, the boy released Ling Hu Jiu. He turned to look at him, but his eyes showed no fear. He had a \*I don't give a f@\$% face and said, "This is my territory. Who the hell are you? Get out of my sight!"

Xuan Luo grinned. He was surprised a child so young had guts to say such aggressive words to him. "Young boy, you cannot be so aggressive."

Seeing Xuan Luo, Ling Hu Jiu was delighted. She ran straight for Xuan Luo and acted all sassy. "Xuan Luo ge, how could you leave me alone like this? Poor me! They are picking on me!"

As she spoke, her eyes sparkled.

"Ha. You're part of her crew?" The young boy had already made his assumption since Xuan Luo and Ling Hu Jiu looked close.

Xuan Luo stayed in silence. Seeing this, the boy said, "She caused me to lose quite a lot of money. Since you're here, you can help her pay. If not..."

The boy was not going to back off.

"What did she do to you guys?" Xuan Luo suspiciously asked.

"Ask her yourself. Regardless, I'm not letting you go!" As he spoke, the circle became tighter; as if they were afraid Xuan Luo would escape.



Xuan Luo looked at Ling Hu Jiu. Why does he cause problems for himself? Sigh. How come this girl is so insensible? He faked a smile and asked, "What happened..."

Ling Hu Jiu looked troubled. She stared at Xuan Luo and whispered, "They stole something and I loudly shouted. That's why..."

The boy was furious. "You dare to say one more word!"

The boy no longer cared about Xuan Luo and was about to throw a punch at Ling Hu Jiu.

Seeing the situation, Xuan Luo uses one hand to push against the boy's head. "Hello!? You think I don't exist? Okay. How about this. You guys deal with your issues. I am not going to take part..."

Xuan Luo backs off. He has already experienced Ling Hu Jiu's bizarreness on their way to Du Cheng. He has decided that it is best not to get involved.

"No....Xuan Luo ge..." Ling Hu Jiu grabbed onto his clothes, pleading.

Bai Tian watched from aside and laughed. "Xuan Luo! It seems like this girl really wants to hold onto you! Haha. Continue. This is a good show!"

Xuan Luo was too righteous. He took out a couple of copper coins and threw it at the boy. "Take this and let this be the end..."

Then, he ran for it. He was annoyed. Why did he mix himself in dirty water? (\*idiom)

"Wait for me!! Xuan Luo ge.." Seeing the opportunity, Ling Hu Jiu hurried off as well.

By the time the boy reacted, they have already gone far...

—

"Xuan Luo ge, you're so bad!" Ling Hu Jiu giggled as she looked at Xuan Luo.

"Eh..." Xuan Luo was speechless. Ling Hu Jiu is truly too much.

—

"Stay right there!' Behind Ling Hu Jiu, a man called out.

Xuan Luo totally did not expect this. He looked at Ling Hu Jiu. She innocently looked back, tongue tied. It's obvious that Ling Hu Jiu had something to do with this man.

"WHAT DID YOU REALLY DO!?" Xuan Luo was so outraged that he could no longer hold back.

Seeing Xuan Luo so angry, Ling Hu Jiu finally told the truth.

Xuan Luo couldn't believe it. He blasted his inner thoughts. "OH GOD! WHY DID I SAVE THIS PERSON? EVEN SO, WHY IS SHE LIKE A DOGSKIN PLASTER? NO MATTER HOW MUCH I SHAKE IT, SHE STAYS ON..."

Although Xuan Luo said this, he does have some good feelings towards Ling Hu Jiu. Ling Hu Jiu is super lively and energetic. Being with her brings him happiness from within....although they've only spent two days together...

But Ling Hu Jiu is too much of a trouble maker. Who knows what she's going to do next!? Xuan Luo is honestly exasperated...

## Chapter 6 The Sky Battle

"Umm..da ge, I have nothing to do with this girl. If you have a problem with her, go ahead and talk to her about it." Xuan Luo rushed.

Immediately after, Xuan Luo ran away. Who knows what Ling Hu Jiu is going to do next?

Bai Tian has already experienced/seen Ling Hu Jiu's "gong fu". Thus, before the man could even say a word, he had already silently disappeared through the crowd.

Now, only Ling Hu Jiu and the man remained. Ling Hu Jiu doesn't know what to say to the man. But through her eyes, she showed her annoyance.

"Go back with me!" The man stated. Looking at Ling Hu Jiu, his eyes displayed love and a tiny bit of guilt.

"My business is none of your business! Go back and tell lao tou that I don't want to go back. And I'm not willing to go back!" Ling Hu Jiu was frustrated. She turned around and ran; disappearing in the crowd.

The man looked at Ling Hu Jiu, speechless. Then, he silently left.

Actually, Xuan Luo didn't go too far. Although Ling Hu Jiu caused a lot of trouble, he knows deep down she has a good heart. Not to mention, the man came from nowhere. He would never leave her alone with a random stranger.

Thus, he watched from afar; in case any unexpected thing occurred.

When Ling Hu Jiu escaped without a scratch, Xuan Luo felt like he could put down the rock in his heart (meaning he can let it go, and not worry).

But from a distance, he noticed that Ling Hu Jiu's facial expression reflected sadness. He doesn't know the reason, but he could sense it.

Her sad departure made Xuan Luo feel a tiny bit of sourness. He doesn't know where that feeling came from though.

From the stone bridge, he sees her looking faraway. Once in awhile, a boat will go through it, and laughter could be heard.

But the anguish remained on her face.

Xuan Luo secretly went up the stone bridge and stood beside Ling Hu Jiu. Silently, he watched the lake with her.

"What's wrong? Are you sad?" Xuan Luo whispered into Ling Hu Jiu's ear.

Hearing his voice, Ling Hu Jiu instantaneously looked angry. All the sadness disappeared like a puff of smoke. She yelled at Xuan Luo, "Xuan Luo, you sure ran away quickly! What? Am I really this dislikeable?"

Ling Hu Jiu had both her hands on her waist. The way she yelled at him reminded him of someone much older. If he didn't know she was only ten years old, he would have thought it's a woman in her thirties with a childlike face.

Seeing Ling Hu Jiu act like this, Xuan Luo felt much better. This is the true Ling Hu Jiu!

"Eh..where you are planning to go now?" Xuan Luo is going to Wu Dang to learn Martial Arts. Therefore, in the next couple of years, he will be spending it in Wu Dang mountain. He wants to fulfill his dream. Ever since Guan Shan Jue got hurt, Xuan Luo has felt very useless. He knows he lacked ability, thus it pushed him even more.

Jiang hu was not as easy and simple as he thought it was though.

Ling Hu Jiu didn't reply. She looked up at the sky; deeply in thought.

"Do you see that?" All of a sudden, Ling Hu Jiu pointed to the sky.

Looking up into the air, there were two figures that had appeared.

"Humpt! This time you won't escape, Shuang Han!" A rough outburst transmitted through the air.

"Haha! We'll see whether you have the ability!" The other voice sounded weak in comparison.

As they got closer, Xuan Luo could see that one man was wearing blue and the other, white. The two were battling. But they were still quite far away, Xuan Luo could only see an outline of them.

Underneath the Sun, their weapons reflected light. The whole sky became the focus point. Everyone was talking about it.

"Come, look! What is it?" People passing by heard the noise and are pointing to the sky.

"What's going on? Everyone, come look!" More people began to gather. Everyone is looking up at the sky.

"Let's go a bit closer" Xuan Luo whispered to Ling Hu Jiu. He has never see anything like this. Therefore, he wanted to take a closer look and see what's really going on.

Without a thought, Xuan Luo grabbed Ling Hu Jiu's hand and ran towards the battle area.

Ling Hu Jiu did not know how to react, but she blushed.

"Feng Sao Mei Hua!" Once again, the rough voice echoed. The man in the blue took out the saber from his back and waved it in the air a couple

of times.

Shuang Han does a backward flip and avoided the hit. From his arm, a shiny concealed weapon shot out and flew towards Zhang Ri. Zhang Ri reacted quickly and got out of the way.

*Clang* The man in the blue skillfully blocked the weapon with his saber.

"You're worthy to be called Shuang Han (sorry, this is really hard to translate). You're able to quickly react and still attack! But that's what makes it fun. Haha. Take this! Shi Zi Yao Tou!" An image of a lion came out of the saber and headed for Shuang Han.

"I'll show you who's stronger! Mi hun biao!" At this moment, a dozen or so beam of golden lights charged at Zhang Ri. But the golden lights were blurry; only a purple haze could be seen.

*Clang, clang, clang, clang, clang, clang*

The sound of the weapons were loud and crisp.

"Tai Ji Jian Wu" The man in blue conducted a dance with his saber, and it was fast approaching Shuang Han. The dance from the saber created jian qi; it sounded like wind, making swooshing sounds.

As Xuan Luo watched this battle, he could feel blood pumping throughout his body. Subconsciously, his fists were clenched.



"Haha. Zhang Ri. I didn't expect you to have practiced Tai Ji Jian Wu. Not bad! But to keep me, until you mastered your Tai Ji Jian Wu, don't even count on it!" Shuang Han loudly snickered. Then, out of nowhere, a couple more concealed weapons popped out.

All of a sudden, the man in blue's body rapidly fell down. And the man in white, Shuang Han, had totally disappeared!

"Despicable! Shuang Han! Only assholes would use these dirty tricks!" As he fell, the man in blue loudly shrieked.

Unexpectedly, Zhang Ri was struck by one of Shuang Han's concealed weapons. That is the reason why he lost his balance and fell from the sky.

Seeing the situation, Xuan Luo ran towards the location of where the man fell...

## Chapter 7 Zhang Ri

Xuan Luo and Ling Hu Jiu ran towards where the man fell. Shortly, they arrived.

But what they saw was a big surprise. A big hole was smashed onto the ground; and within the hole lied the man in blue.

Xuan Luo was astounded. The man fell from such a high place, yet only his clothes looked damaged.

But at this moment, the man hasn't moved at all. Although, in Xuan Luo's opinion, he didn't look too hurt.

Xuan Luo ran towards the hole and heard a booming voice coming out from the hole.

"Shuang Han, I'm not done with you!"

Although the man in the blue seemed paralyzed at the moment, the strength of his voice indicated that he was fine. The man did not say anything else. Hence, Xuan Luo had no choice but to wait patiently. As for Ling Hu Jiu, she lost patience and made an excuse to leave.

Xuan Luo waited for a very long time before the man climbed out from the hole. When Xuan Luo saw him, he awkwardly asked, "Da ge, are you alright?"

Zhang Ri was not expecting to see Xuan Luo. The moment he got out of the hole, he saw Xuan Luo sitting by the side; watching him. Immediately, he made a very exaggerated move and asked, "What do you want to do to me?"

As he spoke, Zhang Ri had both his hands covering his chest, and he was slightly backing his body. It was rather hilarious.

"Da ge, are you from a Clan?" Xuan Luo asked sincerely. Zhang Ri looked like someone who would know something about the Clans. More importantly, Zhang Ri might be from a Clan!

"What? You don't know?" Zhang Ri stared at Xuan Luo in disbelief. Although, he is aware that most boys around Xuan Luo's age have a Wuxia dream. Back then, he also felt the same. Thus, he already knows Xuan Luo wants to find a master.

"I honestly don't know."

Looking at Xuan Luo's innocent face, it did not seem to fit his seven che built. Zhang Ri laughed and elaborated, "Every Clan has their own fighting styles and weapons. For us at Wu Dang, we mainly focus on fist spells and sword spells."

The moment Xuan Luo heard that Zhang Ri was from Wu Dang, he was thrilled. He loudly squealed, "YOU'RE FROM WU DANG!?"

Although Zhang Ri was an open guy, he almost had a heart attack from

Xuan Luo's sudden outburst. Helplessly, he winced, "Aren't you a little bit TOO excited?"

Xuan Luo was almost hysterical. Originally, he thought he would have to go through more twists and turns before finding Wu Dang. But now, this is going to be so much easier. That's why he is so ecstatic.

Since Zhang Ri was so willing to talk to him, this goes to show that Zhang Ri was not difficult to get along with. Therefore, if he asked Zhang Ri to take him to Wu Dang, Zhang Ri would most likely be okay with it.

Xuan Luo chuckled to himself. Then, with a little bit of hesitation, he asked, "I want to go to Wu Dang to learn Martial Arts, but I don't know how..."

Zhang Ri grinned. "Don't worry about it. I happen to be going back to Wu Dang. We can go together!"

Xuan Luo is super happy. This was easier than he thought.

But Zhang Ri added, "But the evaluation is not easy. You better be prepared!"

Xuan Luo nodded and firmly said, "No problem. I believe in myself!"

"Okay then. Let's go enjoy life. I am starving. Let's go eat!" Zhang Ri gets up and drags Xuan Luo alongside with him.

Along the way, Zhang Ri did most of the talking. Once in awhile, Xuan Luo would ask questions about the man in white.

The man in white turns out to be Shuang Han. He is part of the Tang Men Clan. He is actually a good friend of Zhang Ri. They would often fight and battle. They are quite happy with their relationship. Shuang Han is actually very skilled and a well known figure in Tang Men. But for some strange reason, he left the Clan and became a loner wandering in jiang hu. Zhang Ri wasn't sure what happened; hence he went down the mountain to find out his whereabouts.

Fortunately, Shuang Han had no intentions of killing Zhang Ri. If he did, Zhang Ri would not have only been temporarily paralyzed. He would have been poisoned by the weapon and died.

Xuan Luo did not understand. While Zhang Ri and Shuang Han were battling, it seemed like both of them were very angry at each other. Based on their tone of voice, they did not sound like friends at all. Thus, he boldly asked, "Honestly, while you guys were fighting, I thought you were very distanced from him..."

"Don't worry about that. That's between me and him. Even if you try to intervene, there's no use. Come on, let's go and eat here!" Zhang Ri pointed to the Tong Fu Inn, and proudly walks inside.

-----

The waiter from the Inn recognized Xuan Luo and passionately served them. His actions caused Zhang Ri to be a little envious. While they were eating, the waiter kept trying to converse with Xuan Luo.

But there's a reason why the staffs from Tong Fu Inn treated Xuan Luo so well. Xuan Luo didn't know how to explain it to Zhang Ri; as a result, he didn't say anything.

After eating, Xuan Luo wanted to tell Bai Tian his great news. But oddly enough, Bai Tian was not in the Inn. He has no idea where Bai Tian was. Xuan Luo has no choice but to wait inside.

---

It was night time and Bai Tian was still nowhere to be seen. Xuan Luo sat in front of the window and looked up into the sky. He softly whispered, "Bai Tian, where are you?!"

Logically, by now, Bai Tian should have been back already. But Bai Tian's room looked exactly the same. Nothing has been moved.

The more he thought about it, the more restless Xuan Luo became. He was so worried that he couldn't sleep the entire night. The night felt awfully long.

Once in awhile, he would think back to his first encounter with Bai Tian. Ever since he had arrived in Qian Deng Zhen, Bai Tian has been his only friend. He really hoped Bai Tian was okay. If they were fighting on a battlefield, he would let Bai Tian watch his back because he trusted him so much.

---

"Xuan Luo, let's go! I'm going to return to Wu Dang today. Let's go together. But I don't know if you can pass the evaluation! Haha!" Zhang Ri teased Xuan Luo. He can see that Xuan Luo has dark circles under his eyes. Deep inside, he thinks Xuan Luo must be so excited that he couldn't sleep.

"Okay. Let's go." Xuan Luo sighed. Thinking on a deeper level, Bai Tian can kind of fight. In addition, he gave Bai Tian his first spell book from Master Li. Therefore, Bai Tian should be okay.

Xuan Luo is not too worried now. He followed Zhang Ri and together they headed for Wu Dang...

(Seriously? He just left Bai Tian like that? I guess in the past, you can't contact the guy..but I would have waited...)

# Chapter 8 Wu Dang

## Wu Dang Mountain

After many days, with the help of Zhang Ri, Xuan Luo finally arrived at the borders of Wu Dang. But it will still take quite some time for them to arrive at the Master Gate.

The atmosphere of Wu Dang was mysterious and spiritual. The landscape was very charming and gentle. The peaks were sharp and dangerous. Everything felt very grand and majestic. This was how Xuan Luo felt as he looked up the mountain.

On the mountain top, there was a thin layer of cloud and it surrounded the peak of the mountain. Looking at it, it looks as if the mountain created a hole through the clouds.

Along the way, Xuan Luo asked a lot about Wu Dang. The scenery looked like a painting. If one chooses to practice here, it is definitely good for the mind. The air is fresh and life seems to be less complicated.

Wu Dang's kung fu is quick and mysterious. Wu Dang's fist spells have been carried down for thousands of years. It mainly uses tai chi, shape meaning, and ba gua. Wu Dang's fist spells are amongst the best in the world. Their sword spells are also unique in its own ways. It is not inferior to any other Clans.



"The Gate is just up ahead!" Zhang Ri commented as he looked at his familiar surroundings.

Wu Dang's scenery definitely surprised Xuan Luo. Compared to Qian Deng Zhen, this place looked like a place where immortals lived. The clouds and mists only enhanced the feeling.

"Zhang da ge, where is the evaluation held?" Since they have finally arrived, Xuan Luo cannot hold back any longer. His desired Clan is right in front of him. He's definitely lying if he says he is not nervous.

"Well, it really depends. All the evaluations are conducted by our Clan Master. I'm going to take you to meet our Clan Master. The procedures of the evaluations are not determined by me."

Xuan Luo was a little disturbed. Wouldn't the six big Clans want to recruit disciples? Isn't new blood required to keep a Clan's longevity? Thinking, Xuan Luo asked Zhang Ri, "Zhang da ge, do Clans send their people to recruit followers? Isn't it bad if a Clan has no fresh blood? (fresh blood as in young/new followers)"

Zhang Ri smiled and explained, "Usually, Clans do not go recruit for followers. Most of the time, people already have a Clan in mind that they want to follow. If someone really wants to follow our Clan, they will come to us. Or, sometimes, it's like our relationship."

Zhang Ri left out some stuff, but Xuan Luo was able to figure it out on his own. If the Clans sent their disciples to recruit people, then their headquarters will be a lot emptier. If anything were to happen, they would be in big trouble. In addition, the world is so big; if they were to

send people to search for followers, there definitely wouldn't be enough hands.

They walked and talked. The closer they were to the gate, the more Wu Dang disciples they saw. But most of them were not the type to say hi. There were many disciples patrolling, and their main purpose was to check if there were any suspicious people around.

Although Xuan Luo was unaware of Wu Dang's location, there are some who would be able to find out. Every Clan has their own inside information, and there are many loners from jiang hu who want to practice Martial Arts. Hence, some would choose to secretly go into a big Clan and steal their knowledge. That's why there are so many disciples around the entrance.

"Zhang shi xiong! You're back!" A tanned man acknowledged Zhang Ri.

"Haha. Blackie, why are you so free? I don't think you're supposed to be patrolling today!"

Hearing Zhang Ri called him "Blackie", the man was clearly embarrassed (since Xuan Luo was around). He quickly asked, "Zhang shi xiong, who is this?"

"Oh, this xiao xiong di wants to get a Master. We happened to come across each other. Thus, I brought him with me!" Zhang Ri then pointed to Xuan Luo, "You can call him, 'Radish'. (perhaps because Xuan Luo's face is white and youthful? White radish?)

Xuan Luo's face twitched, when did he become "Radish"?

"Haha, xiao xiong di. Don't mind him. Zhang shi xiong is like this. He basically forces us to have a nickname. My name is Lu Hu. But you can call me Xiao Hei (little black, omg it sounds so weird when I translate it)"

"Thank you Lu Hu ge! My name is Xuan Luo...not Radish." Xuan Luo politely responded.

"Okay. I'm going to check up on the Master. I want to see what he is up to. Blackie, please take Radish around. Then bring him to the Master for evaluation!" Zhang Ri rushed and quickly ran off. Xuan Luo and Lu Hu were surprised by his actions.

"Zhang Ri! Get back here!" A female voice hollered.

Lu Hu nodded to show that he understood. "Zhang shi xiong isn't scared of anything except Wang shi mei! Ha!"

"Come on. Let's go. Let me take you around" Lu Hu grabbed Xuan Luo's hand and led him inside the gate.

———

Inside the gate, there was a long flight of limestone stairs. The stairs started from the bottom and continued all the way to the top. It was very, very long. Although Xuan Luo was relatively fit, after walking up for quite awhile, he could not help but complain, "Lu da ge! Isn't this too long?! When are we going to arrive? I reckon it has already been thirty minutes.

Do you guys normally walk like this?"

Along the way, they did encounter a lot of Wu Dang disciples. Lu Hu acknowledged them all, but for Xuan Luo, it was almost suffocating. Xuan Luo wasn't familiar with this surrounding and although he is brave, he is quite reserved amongst strangers.

Hearing Xuan Luo complained, Lu Hu lightly laughed, "Oh you, if you're going to be training in Wu Dang, this is going to be a daily occurrence. You're already complaining?"

Hearing this, Xuan Luo stayed in silence. It's true, if he were to train here, he will definitely have to go through these mountainous roads.

Xuan Luo sighed. "Aiii, I wonder how you guys keep this up!" All of a sudden, he sees something ahead of him. Xuan Luo was extremely curious. "Wait, what is this?"

## Chapter 9 Xuan Wu Stone Sculpture

In front of Xuan Luo was a gigantic stone sculpture. The stone sculpture was a carving of a tortoise. The tortoise was staring straight, and its mouth was open in a surprised way; as if he wanted to shout. When Xuan Luo looked up, he was shocked. Above the tortoise, there was a python. The python had tightly wrapped itself around the tortoise; its top part was still loose, as if squeezing the tortoise wasn't tiring at all.

As Xuan Luo looked at the python and tortoise, he experienced a great wave of emotions. Yet, he has no idea why. When he saw the tortoise, he felt sorry for it. Looking at the python scared him, and he wanted to help the tortoise escape.

All of a sudden, he felt like he had seen the stone carving elsewhere. He knows he has never been here, yet his gut tells him otherwise (OMG HIS PENDENT!! V\_\_V \*sorry, I could not hide my feelings haha).

Xuan Luo continued to look at the sculpture in a daze. It's as if he could experienced what he had happened then; the battle between the two creatures.

Something extraordinary was happening. The sculpture in front of him came alive. The whole battle unraveled in front of Xuan Luo's eyes. The python continuously attacked the tortoise. The severity of the attacking was frightening. It struck again and again, not showing any sign of fatigue. The tortoise did not seem affected though; it just remained inside of its shell. The python realized its attack was not working, and it

changed strategy. Rather than using its poisonous fangs to strike, it decided to use its body to squeeze. The tortoise realized it was in danger and out popped its head. It opened its mouth, trying to bite the snake, but it was too late. By now, the python had firmly wrapped itself around the tortoise; and it was squeezing tighter and tighter. The shell did not seem to be able to handle the grip, and it was slowly deforming. All of the tortoise's legs have now struck out; its eyes are bulging.

Xuan Luo heard a big commotion and suddenly, the tai ji ba gua appeared below the tortoise and the python.

Then everything became normal again. But in Xuan Luo's mind, there was a voice: My name is Xuan Wu. We have been brought together by fate. When you have succeeded, come back and help me break this curse..

Xuan Luo seemed to have snapped out of something. In front of him, the stone sculpture looked exactly the same. It hasn't moved one bit. Thus, he concluded he must have hallucinated. But right away, he denied that thought. What the tortoise said "My name is Xuan Wu. We have been brought together by fate. When you have succeeded, come back, and help me break this curse." was way too real. It was still fresh on Xuan Luo's mind.

Xuan Luo repeated those lines once more. But he doesn't know what succeeded meant, and he has no idea when he will come back.

What just happened gave Xuan Luo a fright. But now, everything looked like it did before. He felt uneasy and unsure. Thus, he turned to Lu Hu and asked, "Lu da ge, did you see that?"

"What?" Lu Hu has no idea what Xuan Luo was talking about.

In reality, the vision Xuan Luo experienced only lasted a couple of breaths. But everything he had seen left a strong impression in his mind. He is somewhat startled, yet excited.

"What was that? Why was I able to see such vision?" He silently thought to himself.

"This stone sculpture is amazing, huh?" Lu Hu commented as he watched Xuan Luo looking at it in awe. He assumed Xuan Luo's reaction was due to the grandness of the sculpture. "This is Wu Dang's protection guard! It's called Xuan Wu. Legend has said that this mythological animal has been protecting our Eastern sky all along!"

Xuan Luo seemed to understand a bit of what Lu Hu was saying. But that incident remained rooted in his mind. It's not going away.

"Forget it. I can't figure it out. I'll just give it some time before asking." Xuan Luo thought to himself.

He continued to follow Lu Hu towards Wu Dang's interiors. The walls were painted red, and the roof tiles were ceramic glazed. It manifested Wu Dang's architecture.

The architecture was not exactly like what Xuan Luo had imagined, but regardless, his heart felt much calmer. It's hard not to be relaxed around such a God-like place (he means the scenery and air).

“Lu da ge, is this where you guys live?” Xuan Luo looked around his surroundings.

Lu Hu loudly chuckled, “Xuan Luo. It wouldn’t make sense for us to live out here! We disciples live behind the mountain. Each day, many of our fellow disciples practice their gong fa and nei gong behind the mountain. We’re only at the front door!”

Xuan Luo’s face immediately flushed. He was embarrassed. His expression did not seem to match his seven che height.

“Okay. I’m going to take you to the Master now!”

———

“Xuan Luo. Wait here. I’m going to make an announcement.” Lu Hu headed inside on his own.

Xuan Luo’s eyes lit up as he looked at the Main Hall in front of him. Above, there were three words craved, “Tai He Dian” The three words looked very majestic and powerful. Looking at it, Xuan Luo could feel its strength.

“Di zi is here to formally greet you, Master! Elder!” (Chinese people really like to talk in 3rd person, it sounds so ridiculous in English). Lu Hu politely greeted the two Superiors.



"What is it?" A person slowly spoke out. Although his tone was light, it could not hide his dignified position.

"Zhang shi xiong brought a young lad to us. He wants to join our Clan. Currently he is outside waiting. What do you want to do with him, Master?"

"Haha. It seems like we haven't had a new blood for quite some time now!?" An old man with somewhat messy hair spoke up, next to the man.

"Is it possible that shi di, you're interested?" The other old man smiled.

"Yes. Kind of. I wonder how his natural abilities are?"

"Let's go find out!"

"Lu Hu, bring the young lad in!"

"Yes!"

-----

Xuan Luo was extremely nervous as he watched Lu Hu coming out. He quickly rushed, "Lu da ge, what did they say?"

Lu Hu's face looked extremely sullen. Seeing this, Xuan Luo had a very bad feeling. Right away, his mood fell.

"Lu da ge, did they say...." Xuan Luo looked as if he was about to cry.

Lu Hu smiled, "I'm kidding! Master told me to bring you in!"

Seeing Lu Hu acting this way, Xuan Luo was dumbfounded. But deep inside, he was delighted.

He followed Lu Hu and walked into the Main Hall....

## Chapter 10 Tian Yu Zi

"Master! I have brought him in." said Lu Hu politely.

The hair of the two elders were graying white. Xuan Luo felt unease: They are the Masters of Wu Dang? Why are they so old? And why does one of them have a bird's nest on his head?

Obviously, Xuan Luo kept those thoughts to himself. Seeing how Lu Hu was being so respectful, those two must have a lot of status in Wu Dang.

Xuan Luo felt a bit confused. He still doesn't know who the two elders were. He doesn't know how to acknowledge them. At that moment, he is only standing behind Lu Hu; gazing at the two elders.

"Young man, you want to join Wu Dang?" asked the old man with the bird's nest on his head. Looking at Xuan Luo's youthful face, he immediately stepped out and got straight to the point.

"Umm..I don't know what I'm supposed to call you, ye ye?!" Xuan Luo was trying to be polite. His head was down, but he secretly took a peep at the old man.

"Oh my goodness, Little Lu (Lu Hu). You didn't introduce us!? You haven't done a proper job!" The old man looked a bit agitated.

Lu Hu immediately smartened up and explained to Xuan Luo, "This is my Master. He is also the Zhang Men of our Clan. The man next to him is our Zhang Lao. We call him Tian Yu Zi Zhang Lao."

After the introduction, Xuan Luo quickly said, "Zhang Men. Zhang Lao." (In Chinese, you're supposed to say the name of the person to show that you have acknowledged them. It's the right and polite thing to do)

Although Xuan Luo was very polite, it didn't seem to have any effects on the Zhang Men. On the other hand, Tian Yu Zi was the total opposite. He looked at Xuan Luo as if he had found a treasure. He placed his face extremely close to Xuan Luo; there was only about a thread of a distance between them.

Xuan Luo was not expecting this. Slowly, he tried to back away. He was afraid the old man would do something.

But the old man's glance remained equally powerful and he pressed forward.

By now, Xuan Luo's bow had already reached a 90 degrees angle. Yet, Tian Yu Zi was still pushing. He bent down his waist because he wanted to look at Xuan Luo's face; as if he were a fortune teller.

It was physically and mentally tiring for Xuan Luo to hold this position, since it tested the strength of his lower back and he had to deal with this odd behaviour from Tian Yu Zi.

But what choice does he have? Under the mercy of someone, one must

bow down. Their position just looked rather comical.

Zhang Men sees this and loudly coughs, "Umm.. you two were not separated from before, right? This looks like a grandfather grandchild type of relationship!?"

Lu Hu instantly burst into laughter. Tian Yu Zi and Xuan Luo immediately tried to stand upright.

However, Xuan Luo was very quick because his back was killing him. Tian Yu Zi was a tad bit slower, and as a result, their lips touched!

Xuan Luo makes a vomiting sound. The moment he realized what had happened, he quickly grabbed his neck and tried to puke.

After a bit, he looked angrily at Tian Yu Zi, "You bird nest man! That was my first kiss!" Xuan Luo exploded.

He knows he doesn't have the power to do anything at Wu Dang, but at least he can use his mouth.

Strangely, Tian Yu Zi didn't seem to mind the kiss. He looked totally fine and stood where he was. Then he used his tongue to touch his lips; as if he wanted the kiss to linger.

"Master... I'm going to go now!" Lu Hu held in his laughter and quickly said to Zhang Men.

Tian Yu Zi's misbehaviour is the topic of many disciples. As an elder, he definitely did not act like a dictator. Instead, he is very warm and easy to get along with. Thus, he is well liked within the Clan.

Once Lu Hu exited the Main Hall, he could no longer hide in his laughter. He roared and started rolling on the ground; holding his belly with his two hands.

Zhang Men ignored what had happened. "Your bones have wonderful energy and your flexibility is quite good. Your face is okay too (Usually, Chinese people like to "read" people's faces as it could kind of tell their fortune/luck).... I suppose you are a good Martial Arts material. Have you practiced Martial Arts before?"

"I've practiced for a few years." Hearing someone praise him, Xuan Luo could not hide his pride.

"Not bad. You must have trained well in order to be so flexible. I think you might be suitable for our Clan's Martial Arts. This is Wu Dang's simplest xin fa. Try it, and see if you can create some internal energy."

Zhang Men took out a book and threw it at Xuan Luo.

Xuan Luo caught the book and opened it to take a look. The book was thin and there weren't many words. Within a few minutes, Xuan Luo had finished reading the entire thing. He closed his eyes and thought about it. Then he sat down, cross legged and followed what the book had said.

Time passed by, minute by minute. Zhang Men started to frown. This

was the easiest xin fa, it shouldn't be taking so long. Xuan Luo should have woken up by now. How come it doesn't seem to be affecting him at all?

In fact, Xuan Luo was also very anxious. He did try to follow the book's instructions, but for some odd reason, he couldn't feel the slightest nei li. He couldn't control the nei li from before either.

Unconsciously, he started to think about the xin fa from the ragged book (the book from Part 1, Chapter 1).

As Xuan Luo repeated the spell from the inside, the nei li from his core started to spread out and went all over his body. The nei li became thicker as it went through his veins. He doesn't know why either. But after practicing the nei li for a couple of days, he felt that something wanted to explode inside him.

Bang\*

All of a sudden, Xuan Luo's core felt like it exploded. All the nei li from the veins totally went back inside the core. All the overflowing nei li had disappeared.

The feeling was great though. Xuan Luo felt much fresher. The feeling could not be described in words.

Slowly, he opened his eyes. Xuan Luo's internal ability has changed. Compared to before, it was like Heaven and Earth. Zhang Men and Tian Yu Zi were still watching.

When Xuan Luo woke up, Zhang Men was slightly excited, "How was it?"

Xuan Luo looked down. "Well, I followed the xin fa from the book. But I didn't experience anything. However, this book made my heart feel much calmer."

Zhang Men was a bit disappointed. The book was clearly Wu Dang's entry level xin fa. Even if someone has satisfactory qualities, they would feel a little nei li within them. Yet, Xuan Luo had sat there for an hour and didn't experience anything. Logically, this should not have happened.

Zhang Men can't figure out why and just left it. "I guess your body isn't suitable after all. Nei li has to complement gong fa, but from what you said, you didn't experience any nei li." Zhang Men sighed.

In Jiang hu, there are many who have succeeded. But when it comes to practicing, only those who can create nei li from within are considered true Wu zhe. For those who practice but are unable to create nei li, they are called Wu xiu. Although there is only a word difference, the difference between the two is incomparable.

Nei li is not as simple as it seems. The thing is, the core constantly goes through changes. During the process, the amount of nei li it can store is limited. Sometimes, a bit nei li can change the whole battle; from defeat to victory. That's the reason why a lot of people want to join a Clan. It's not only about practicing a suitable Martial Arts, but more so on learning the nei gong xin fa from that Clan.



Even if it's the simplest nei gong xin fa, if one is able to practice nei li, it will take them much further.

A lot of influential powers around Jiang hu have their own nei gong xin fa and martial art styles. However, compared to a Clan, they're not very proper/traditional. Although, that is not absolute. But in general, that's the difference between a Clan and an influential power.

"It seems like your natural abilities are lacking, but I don't know why? You have practiced Martial Arts before and your physical conditions look great. You're definitely suitable for Martial Arts. This is such a pity." Zhang Men sighed. Originally, he thought Xuan Luo would definitely pass the evaluation; sadly, Xuan Luo could not feel the slightest difference. It was ridiculous that he could not feel a thing.

But what Zhang Men doesn't know is that Xuan Luo has already practiced a type of xin fa. That's the reason why Xuan Luo could not unleash another xin fa. Xin fa is not the same as Martial Arts style. A person can only practice one xin fa his entire life. If one were to want to learn a new xin fa, he would have to get rid of all his powers from before. That's the only way anyone can learn a new xin fa.

There are some in Jiang hu who would find a random book (unknown sources) to practice xin fa. However, if they find that their xin fa is too weak, they will not hesitate one bit to get rid of their powers the moment they find a better xin fa.

But there's a down side to getting rid of your powers. During that time, the body is the most fragile. The veins are all damaged from the violent act of self destruction. Those who are mildly affected will heal in a few days, but those who are severely injured will never be able to practice xin

fa again.

Seeing this situation, Tian Yu Zi quickly added. "Forget it. You can't practice nei li but you can still become a very good Martial Artist! I think this young lad is suitable for me. Shi xiong, let me have him!"

"No, I don't want to!" Xuan Luo looked angrily at the old man. It wasn't that he wanted to disrespect Tian Yu Zi, but he hasn't forgotten what had happened.

"It doesn't matter what you want! Shi xiong, this boy is mines!" With that, Tian Yu Zi dragged Xuan Luo with him and headed towards his residence.

Xuan Luo's rejection remained ignored. Zhang Men smiled at Tian Yu Zi's action and didn't say a word.

Xuan Luo tried to escape from Tian Yu Zi's grasp, but realized that he could not use any of his strength regardless how hard he tried. Tian Yu Zi was too strong. He felt like a fish that was about to be slaughtered. It was a terrible feeling. The only thing Xuan Luo could do was glare at Tian Yu Zi...

## Chapter 11 Bummed out

Xuan Luo was bummed out. He didn't know what type of clash he had; perhaps he should have looked at the calendar beforehand. (This is related to superstition. Chinese people follow a lunar calendar and it will tell you which days are lucky or not).

Zhang Men gave him the simplest Wu Dang xin fa. It was created so that people with satisfactory abilities would still be able to handle it. Xuan Luo was extremely disappointed because he felt like his natural talents were quite good. In addition, he had already attained some nei li on his own. In the past, he would take out the ragged book and reread it. But now, he doesn't need to do that anymore; he has memorized the book from open to close. Now, he goes right ahead to mediate when practicing nei li.

But Xuan Luo is a total novice in Martial Arts. Although he is big and tall for his size, deep down, he is still a child. He didn't realize that the nei li he has been practicing is the reason why he could not unleash the xin fa Zhang Men had given him.

Wu Dang's main purpose is to calm the heart and mind though. Even if one cannot practice Wu Dang's gong fa, it can still help freshen in the mind. Hence, Xuan Luo quickly felt at peace.

"Hey. Old man! Where are you taking me? Being pressed was a terrible feeling; especially when he is seven che tall. It was somewhat disgraceful to be so helpless around such an old man.

"You will find out soon enough!" Tian Yu Zi responded. Looking down, he can see Xuan Luo being squeezed in between his armpit. He smiled. Imagine a man smiling with wrinkly skin and hair that looks like a bird's nest. Xuan Luo felt a little sick.

But he knows he cannot fight back. Hence, he decided not to think about it.

At that moment, Xuan Luo's nightmare appeared in his mind. The fiery sky; a young child stumbling without direction; tripping over a curb; the child becomes more conscious of his surroundings and turns back to see the looming fire.

Unconsciously, Xuan Luo became afraid and his body became rigid. Tian Yu Zi was able to feel the change. Originally, Xuan Luo was actively squirming about, but all of a sudden, Xuan Luo became as stiff as a rock. Tian Yu Zi didn't know why, but he quicken his steps towards his residence.

This moment felt very familiar to Xuan Luo. He felt like he had been carried like this before. He doesn't know why, but it felt very familiar.

Xuan Luo's face turned white and there was no colour on his face. Sweat appeared on his forehead and started dripping like rain drops.

Finally, Tian Yu Zi stopped and dropped Xuan Luo on the ground. He realized that Xuan Luo's whole body was twitching, and his face looked like he was suffering. Tian Yu Zi became super concerned and hastily asked, "What's wrong? What happened to you?"

Xuan Luo totally ignored Tian Yu Zi. At that moment, he had lost all his senses.

Tian Yu Zi has no idea what happened, but from Xuan Luo's expression, he could tell Xuan Luo was suffering a lot. Seeing him react so badly, Tian Yu Zi's face became solemn as well.

Xuan Luo's condition continued for quite some time. By now, the moon has appeared and it is night time. Since they were on a mountain, the night air of Wu Dang was quite chilly; the contrast was quite drastic.

But those who practices Martial Arts are usually not affected by the change in temperature. After training at a certain level, even if it's snowing, a thin layer will still do.

Xuan Luo slowly opened his eyes. Everything looked unfamiliar. He doesn't know what to say.

"Water....water..." His eyes looked lost as he murmured.

Tian Yu Zi quickly poured a cup of water and placed it next to Xuan Luo.

Xuan Luo struggled to sit up as he drank the cup of water. He finished it in one go.

"What happened to you?" Tian Yu Zi anxiously asked.

"Nothing." Xuan Luo calmly replied. Although he wasn't too fond of Tian Yu Zi, he was slightly touched by his caring expression.

"Nothing? Are you kidding me? I saw how you were earlier. If I didn't know better, I would have thought you had epilepsy!" Tian Yu Zi pouted.

"Leave...leave.." Xuan Luo rushed Tian Yu Zi out of his room.

Tian Yu Zi exited and shook his head. Then he quietly said in an undertone, "That was my room, how the heck did I get kicked out?"

The night ended very briskly. Soon, it was already morning and the bright Sun shone across the land.

Xuan Luo was already awake. During these recent years, he had developed a very good habit of waking up early to practice Martial Arts. Each day, he wakes up around the time when the Sun comes up. It was natural.

As he exited the room, he realized everything was unfamiliar. Then he smacked his head and remembered he was no longer in Qian Deng Zhen. This was Wu Dang.

Outside of the house was a huge courtyard. There was a tai ji ba gua image on the ground. It took up most of the space.

Standing in the middle of the image was Tian Yu Zi. He was practicing his quan fa. Xuan Luo's lips curled as he stood aside to watch.

Tian Yu Zi's quan fa flowed smoothly like cloud and water. There was no pauses in between. Not only that, Xuan Luo could feel how orderly Tian Yu Zi's breathing was. As Xuan Luo watched, he was amazed.

"He is simply practicing his fists, yet he is able to do it so well. Tian Yu Zi must be very skilled." Xuan Luo thought to himself. Then he recalled how hard he tried to resist Tian Yu Zi the day before, and failed. He should have known.

—

"Hehe. What are you thinking about?" Tian Yu Zi's face appeared right in front of him.

"Ah!!" Xuan Luo loudly yelled and fell backwards. There was a loud bang and Xuan Luo's head striked the ground.

"What the heck!? You want to give me a heart attack?" Xuan Luo hollered.

"Hehe. It's not my fault you were sooo distracted. Are you thinking of a girl?!?! Let me tell you, at Wu Dang, we have many female disciples. We also have female masters. Next time, I'll take you and we can secretly watch them bathe!" Tian Yu Zi laughed.

Hearing Tian Yu Zi say this, Xuan Luo was furious. "What kind of Master are you? I don't care. Even if you beat me to death, I will not call you my Master. I've never promised. You forced me here. Yeah, that's right!"

"Pssh. If you weren't thinking so deeply, I wouldn't have said what I said!?" Tian Yu Zi grumpily replied. Then he pointed to Xuan Luo. "Starting from today, I am your Master. Come, let me see what you got."

Tian Yu Zi headed straight for an attack. Xuan Luo was ready. He wanted to explode. Originally, he was already quite bummed out about what had happened. At this moment, he truly wanted to fight.

"Come!" Xuan Luo roared. He jumped up and was waiting for Tian Yu Zi's attack.



## Chapter 12 Oppressed

In regards to Tian Yu Zi, Xuan Luo doesn't know what to think. First and foremost, Tian Yu Zi is way too lax with his image. He does not act like his status at all. Although Tian Yu Zi gave him a friendly vibe, as a Master, he should be more serious.

Back when he learned Martial Arts at the Martial Arts building, it was only Bai Tian and him. Hence, Master Li was quite strict with them; they did not receive any special treatment.

Seeing how badly Xuan Luo wanted to fight him, Tian Yu Zi giggled. He remained where he was, having no intentions of making a move (The previous chapter said he was about to make a move...don't blame me! I'm only translating! Anyway..).

Xuan Luo knows that he is no match for Tian Yu Zi. Deep down, he knows that Tian Yu Zi wants to get a better idea of his abilities; in order to develop the best training plan for him. But on the flip side, since he was a newbie, Xuan Luo doesn't think Tian Yu Zi would take him seriously and use all his strength. Tian Yu Zi is definitely going to go easy on him.

Hence, although Xuan Luo had openly stated how he does not accept Tian Yu Zi as his Master, secretly, his heart had somewhat already accepted him.

Seeing Tian Yu Zi just standing there, Xuan Luo pounced at him like a

fierce tiger.

Compared to those around his age, Xuan Luo's speed and power is definitely one of the finest; especially since he practiced nei li, the nei li in his core has been changing his entire body.

Since the distance between Xuan Luo and Tian Yu Zi wasn't far to begin with, within a second, Xuan Luo's fist had already arrived in front of Tian Yu Zi.

The punch consisted of all Xuan Luo's brute strength, except for nei li.

As he released his punch, Xuan Luo was secretly delighted. But then he noticed something was wrong. It didn't seem like he struck anything. Tian Yu Zi had disappeared!

Xuan Luo didn't really know how to react. He definitely underestimated Tian Yu Zi.

"Wow, that punch was pretty aggressive! But I wonder, do you only know brute force?" Somehow, Tian Yu Zi ended up behind Xuan Luo.

Xuan Luo quickly turned his feet, and began to attack again.

He already reacted quite briskly, but Tian Yu Zi was even faster. He continuously tried to punch Tian Yu Zi, but again and again, he missed.

"Your response time is not bad. But your attack needs work! Give me all

you got!" Tian Yu Zi wisely said. At that moment, Xuan Luo's image of Tian Yu Zi changed. He no longer seemed like the silly old man, but rather, a man full of wisdom.

Hearing those words infuriated Xuan Luo, though. He wasn't able to relax.

"Forget it. I won't avoid anymore. Use all the moves you have on me!" Seeing how frustrated Xuan Luo was, Tian Yu Zi decided.

Xuan Luo got closer and started quickening his hits. In addition, he used his legs as well.

But Tian Yu Zi remained where he was, and blocked everything using only one hand.

Xuan Luo could not take it anymore. He bellowed and all of a sudden, his power level changed!

Bang!

His attack unintentionally released *nei li*. As a result, he made the air around him move and swooshing sounds were created.

Tian Yu Zi was slightly shocked by the force. Nonetheless, he used his palm to block Xuan Luo's punch.

Then, he grasped Xuan Luo's right hand, and Xuan Luo was unable to

move any longer.

"Hmm..this punch was a lot stronger than the previous ones! I sense internal energy. Not bad." Tian Yu Zi reverted back to his childlike behaviour; giggling like a silly old man.

Tian Yu Zi released Xuan Luo's hand, and Xuan Luo fell down limp on the ground; with sweat covering his forehead. He had never used so much strength before. He doesn't even know how he managed to go on for so long.

Tian Yu Zi didn't act like it was a big deal though. He just remained standing where he was, and told Xuan Luo what his strengths and weaknesses were.

Thinking back, Xuan Luo was a bit confused about his last punch. Somehow, he felt like the nei li from his core ended up in his fist suddenly.

Xuan Luo sat on the ground, unsatisfied with his defeat. He looked up at Tian Yu Zi and said, "Old man. What other weaknesses do I have? You can say it. I can handle the blow!"

The attack used up all of Xuan Luo's strengths. Right now, he has nothing left.

Tian Yu Zi was pondering over Xuan Luo's last punch. Based on Xuan Luo's current strength, it was definitely something out of his league. At that moment, he felt the nei li from within.

"Hey little guy, have you been practicing a xin fa?"

If Xuan Luo was already practicing a xin fa, then other xin fas would not work on him. But based on experience, Zhang Men had way more than he does. How could Zhang Men have missed this possibility?

Xuan Luo felt anxious. He didn't tell anyone about him practicing nei gong xin fa. He wanted to avoid trouble, so he lied, "I just used more strength. That's all. There's no xin fa!"

"Haha. It's not like I'm going to punish you. From your punch, I could feel something internal; and the only way you can demonstrate internal energy is through xin fa." Tian Yu Zi chuckled as he looked into Xuan Luo's eyes. Then he dug his finger in his nose.

Seeing Tian Yu Zi act like this, Xuan Luo was speechless. Then, he decided to tell the truth.

But Xuan Luo kind of hesitated because he was worried Tian Yu Zi would steal his xin fa. But after thinking about it, he has already memorized everything. Since it's already in his mind, no one can take it away.

Tian Yu Zi could read Xuan Luo's thoughts on his face. Smiling, he said, "Since you already have a xin fa, I'm not going to say anything else. You don't have to be scared either. I'm already so old, there is no need for me to steal your xin fa. Plus, I practice Wu Dang's traditional xin fa. Other xin fas are normally not good enough for me."

Tian Yu Zi was correct. Wu Dang's traditional xin fa is definitely one of the best there is. Hearing this, Xuan Luo felt relieved. "I was thinking too much!"

"Haha. But having a xin fa is useless if you do not know how to unleash it. By the way, each Martial Artist can only practice one xin fa during the lifetime. If you want to practice something else, then you will have to get rid of all the powers you have now. But there are risks to self destruction."

Tian Yu Zi paused. "But based on what I saw, your xin fa is similar to our Wu Dang's. They are both yin. Thus, it wouldn't be against the rules if you practice our style. However, it looks like you haven't been practicing for too long. Why don't you just give this one up? There are different types of Wu Dang xin fa you can try. Want to give it a shot?"

Xuan Luo was comforted by this knowledge. But thinking back to the pain he went through the first time (when he first encountered the nei li), he refuses to go through it again. Who knows whether practicing other xin fa would be worse? He spread out his hands and said, "Fine, old man. I'll tell you the truth. I have practiced a xin fa, and the xin fa is something I found up on the mountain. At the time, I thought it was fun and I wanted to try it. I didn't expect to actually create nei li from it. But now, I don't want to remove it anymore. I have already been practicing it for quite awhile. I don't want to start over. If I have so much time, I might as well use it to learn more quan fa instead!"

Xuan Luo was very clear. After hearing this, Tian Yu Zi nodded to show he understood.

Originally, when Tian Yu Zi first saw Xuan Luo, a special feeling popped in his heart. That's the reason why Tian Yu Zi didn't care whether Xuan Luo was able to demonstrate nei li or not. He immediately treated Xuan Luo as one of his disciples.

But now, Tian Yu Zi felt like he got lucky. Although Xuan Luo's xin fa was different from Wu Dang's, the type is similar. The nei li is considered yin; just like Wu Dang's.

There are two types of nei li; yin and yang. Yang is hard and violent (similar to brute force), whereas yin leans more towards technique.

"Haha. Okay. From now on, you're going to be learning from me." Tian Yu Zi pats Xuan Luo on the shoulder.

Xuan Luo, however, was not pleased. "You can't do this. I never promised!"

"It's not up to you. It's up to me. Stop with the rubbish! Starting from tomorrow, each morning you will practice with me. I will guide you!"

Tian Yu Zi walked out of the courtyard.

In the courtyard, only Xuan Luo remained. But he had a grumpy expression on his face.

"What kind of Master is this?"

## Chapter 13 Ba Gua Stage

As a matter of fact, what Tian Yu Zi said were not all true. But one thing that is true is that Wu Dang definitely has many different types of nei gong xin fa. The best xin fas are the ones that are the most difficult to learn; although it depends on the person.

But Tian Yu Zi lied about something significant. The thing is, Tian Yu Zi actually doesn't have nei li. His body state didn't allow him to learn it. As a result, he switched to wai gong instead. Wu Dang's style is actually created by Tian Yu Zi. Although it doesn't consist of nei li, the amount of damage it can conceive is still quite substantial.

Hence, when Tian Yu Zi saw that Xuan Luo wasn't able to produce nei li, he didn't care at all. He still wanted him.

Although, this situation is rather unique. After all, usually there are only two outcomes. It's either:

1. The person cannot produce the nei li
2. The person is able to produce the nei li, and continues practicing the xin fa

This situation is strange because usually those who come to Wu Dang are after the xin fa. Although many want to learn the Wu Dang style, the xin fa is what most thirst for. Wu Dang style is hard to learn, but xin fa is even harder (and not everyone can learn it).



After fighting with Tian Yu Zi, Xuan Luo's desire to learn Martial Arts deepened even more.

---

After having a gloomy morning, Xuan Luo decided to go and take a walk. Since he is new to Wu Dang, there are lots of new and exciting things for him to see and understand. Therefore, he should take this opportunity and explore.

The mountain of Wu Dang is a lot bigger than he'd imagined. And so far, he has just seen the gate entrance. If he were to count the whole area from the border, the size of Wu Dang could be comparable to a city.

"Hey, Radish! I heard Tian Yu Zi zhang lao took you in as a disciple!?" Xuan Luo was walking aimlessly, but suddenly heard a familiar voice.

He turns and sees Zhang Ri. Smiling, he said, "Zhang da ge, why are you here?"

Seeing Xuan Luo, Zhang Ri was quite excited. Although he wasn't exactly clear of what had happened in Tai He Dian, but knowing the fact that Tian Yu Zi wanted Xuan Luo made him jump for joy.

"Haha. This is where us disciples are supposed to rest. But most of them went to ba gua stage to practice. They won't be back so soon. When are you moving here?"

Xuan Luo was confused. Moving here? Tian Yu Zi never told him about

that. He anxiously asked, "Zhang da ge, are disciples supposed to live together?"

"Of course!? What else do you think?" Zhang Ri rolled his eyes; Xuan Luo asked a question that should have been totally obvious.

"But the old man never told me. Today, I got lectured too! Ughhh ruined my day."

Zhang Ri could hear some resentment from Xuan Luo's voice. He chuckled, "Tian Yu Zi zhang lao is a very good elder master. He does not act superior to anyone else. You are one lucky boy!"

"But he forced me to go to his residence without my consent!" Xuan Luo grumpily muttered.

"Oh, you must be wrong. Tian Yu Zi zhang lao has never ever forced anyone to be his student. He must like you a lot, but you aren't used to the way he demonstrates it. But don't worry, Tian Yu Zi zhang lao is very skillful. Any moves that he make is spectacular. It is also very difficult to imitate." Zhang Ri looks enviously at Xuan Luo. (Note: The fact Zhang Ri keeps saying "zhang lao" also shows he respects Tian Yu Zi a lot)

Xuan Luo tried to digest what Zhang Ri said. Was Tian Yu Zi really that amazing? How come he couldn't tell?

But thinking back to earlier, Tian Yu Zi never showed him his true potential. While he was testing him, he barely lifted a finger; yet he was able to put him through so much agony.

Xuan Luo decided to change the subject. "Haha, it looks like you're about to go somewhere. Where are you off to?"

"Oh my goodness. I almost forgot! I was about to head to Ba gua stage!" Zhang Ri smacked his head.

"Ba gua stage? What is that?" Xuan Luo was confused.

"Haha. Since you're new, I'll take you there!"

———

As he followed Zhang Ri, Xuan Luo lost track of how many steps and turns they made before they arrived at a public square. In the middle of the public square, there was a platform. The platform was about half the size of the square. As Xuan Luo looked closely, he noticed that the platform was designed like the Tai ji ba gua. Xuan Luo was extremely curious. Ever since he has arrived at Wu Dang, he has been seeing the ba gua symbol everywhere. He wants to know why.

"Zhang da ge, why is the ba gua symbol everywhere in Wu Dang?" Honestly, Xuan Luo has no idea what the ba gua symbol means. The only thing he knew, was that the symbol was called ba gua.

Zhang Ri was flabbergasted by Xuan Luo's question. "You don't know what the ba gua means? Oh my god. You don't know anything. I am starting to wonder why you wanted to come to Wu Dang to begin with!"

After a few moments, Zhang Ri calmed down and explained, "Ba Gua is a representation of yin and yang. The "—" represents yang, while "- -" represents yin. The Ba Gua has 8 sides (like an octagon), and each of the side has 3 strokes that consist of either "—" or "- -" or both.

[illegible]

“Bascally, Wu Dang’s style, Tai Chi sword, Tai Chi fist, Ba gua fist, and so on are all inspired by the ba gua symbol. That is the reason why the ba gua is such a symbolic thing to us here.”

Zhang Ri looked at the ba gua symbol and smiled at Xuan Luo. "Also, the stage right here has good feng shui. If you practice here, you're more likely to see results."

Regardless of whether it is the past or the present, feng shui has a lot of believers. Those who believe in feng shui care greatly about where things are located. Depending where the things are located, it can affect the environment tremendously. Wu Dang's ancestors clearly cared a lot about the feng shui of their location. (Note: Feng shui is common amongst Chinese people. Some people believe it, but some people see it as superstition).

After listening to Zhang Ri, Xuan Luo realized his knowledge was extremely thin, and vowed to improve himself.

“Hey. Zhang da ge, what are they doing over there?” Xuan Luo was referring to the ones on the stage.

## Chapter 14 Xuan Yuan Duan Ai

Seeing how there were so many people surrounding the ba gua stage, Zhang Ri frowned.

"Let's go. I think something happened!"

Zhang Ri did not try to conceal his concern, thus, the two quickly ran towards the stage.

Usually, there are not this many disciples here. For some reason, today, the number of disciples have dramatically increased. It was obvious that something had happened.

Once they got closer, Xuan Luo could see two people battling. No wonder, he thought; people want to be entertained.

"Come, look! Isn't that Wu Di xiong?"

"Who is battling with him?"

"....."

Voices could be heard everywhere, but no one knew what truly happened. Xuan Luo had a very tough time pushing through the crowd

before he was able to get a clear view.

The two disciples were “practicing”, but the atmosphere felt very strange. It didn’t seem like they were practicing at all. Tension could be felt.

Zhang Ri finally managed to squeeze through the crowd as well. He asked the disciple next to him, “What’s going on?”

The disciple looked at Zhang Ri and politely responded, “Shi xiong, I have no idea. When I have arrived, they were already like this.”

This caused Zhang Ri to crinkle in thought. Usually, disciples are not supposed to battle within the Clan. Practicing is the exception, but the current scenario didn’t seem right...

“Look, they are moving!!” A random disciple spoke up. The whole atmosphere changed once more. Everyone is staring intently up at the stage; watching the two men.

On stage, there were only two guys. One was a man named “Wu Di”, and the other one was an unknown person. The other person looked extremely solitary; he looked like someone who distanced himself from people.

Suddenly, Xuan Luo’s heart thumped. For some reason, as he looked at the cold man, he could feel that there was something frozen inside his heart; similar to what he had felt when he passed out in Qian Deng Zhen long ago.

The two men stood as straight as a tree, each holding a sword.

“Hey. Is that all you’ve got? Bastard will always be bastard. Come and get me!” mocked Wu Di. Although his voice wasn’t loud, everyone could hear him.

The cold man did not respond. He remained where he was, with the sword in his hand. His eyes, however, were deadly.

“Prepare to die!” Wu Di hollered as he lift his sword.

Xuan Luo could tell that the jian fa Wu Di used was soft and calm, just like water; it didn’t look very powerful, but he was proven wrong immediately.

The slow dance of the sword actually created crackling sounds in the air.

It was at that moment that Xuan Luo truly experienced what a “style” was. It was incomparable to his attacks. Thus, Xuan Luo watched very intently at every move the two were making. He did not want to miss a thing.

Wu Di straighten his arm and headed straight to stab the cold man. But the cold man had no reaction. He calmly remained where he was.

Just as the tip of the sword was about to reach him, the man lifted his



sword and turned his wrist; it was as if the sword in his hand had a life of its own.

Originally, the audience thought the man was a goner, but instead, they were shocked to see how the twirl of the sword caused the sword from Wu Di's hand to bounce away into a different direction.

Everyone was speechless.

"Wow! That was an amazing move to dissolve his attack!" Zhang Ri could not hide his astonishment.

But the battle was not yet over. The two continued on.

Ching! Ching! (sound of the swords hitting against each other lol)

The sound of metal clanging against each other was loud and clear in this quiet setting.

Another crossover happened, and once again the swords clashed. The cold man's face remained emotionless, but the sword in his hand was shaking. Clearly, this defence was no easy task.

"Ha! You insignificant talent!" Wu Di was boastful as he was pleased to see the impact his sword had against the cold man's. Suddenly, Wu Di shifted his arm and swung his sword around and straightened it to strike the man again.

Obviously, the cold man was not going to stand and get stabbed. He also straighten his sword, and the two swords collided. Both of them had very skillful jian fas. The whole stage were lit by the reflection of the swords, and repeated sounds of striking metal could be heard. But all of a sudden, Wu Di flew out and crashed onto the ground.

Xuan Luo was dumbfounded. He had already watched very carefully. He barely even blinked but he couldn't see how Wu Di got hit!?

The cold man pointed his sword at Wu Di, "You can joke around, but you need to know your limits."

The man then turns to leave. Everyone is still confused by the downfall.

"Wu Di, are you alright?" Zhang Ri quickly flew to Wu Di's side.

"Zhang shi xiong, I am okay. Sorry for the embarrassment!" Wu Di forced a smile, but his eyes showed hatred.

"What happened earlier? How did you fly out?" Zhang Ri was confused as well.

"I don't know. I just felt a very strong force all of a sudden. It headed for me and it pushed me out!"

"Okay. Okay, let's practice then." Zhang Ri lifted Wu Di to his feet and they began to practice together.

-----

As the cold man was leaving, Xuan Luo silently followed him.

"Da ge, wait for me!!" Xuan Luo waved his arm and ran towards the man.

The man stopped and turned around. He looked annoyed, "Why are you following me?"

"I want to get to know you!"

"I'm busy." The man had no intention of talking to Xuan Luo. He quickly turned and walked off.

"Hey! Wait for me! I just joined this Clan. Da ge, how did you make the guy fly out at the end? What move is that?" Xuan Luo was curious, and wasn't going to let the guy get away just like that.

-----

Xuan Luo really has thick skin. After pestering the guy for a long time, he finally got his name. The man's name was Xuan Yuan Duan Ai.

When Xuan Luo got back to Tian Yu Zi's residence, it was already noon. But Xuan Luo was very agitated. When Xuan Yuan Duan Ai told him his name, it was as if something opened inside of his mind. He couldn't stop repeating, "Xuan Yuan....Xuan Yuan...." (OMG THAT IS HIS FIRST NAME...

maybe Xuan Yuan Duan Ai is his LONG LOST BROTHER?!?!?!)

## Chapter 15 Lost

Xuan Luo had no idea how big Wu Dang truly was. As a result, he actually got lost. He has no idea where he was.

Aside from a couple of striking objects/locations, Wu Dang's architecture looks very similar. Thus, it isn't surprising that Xuan Luo has gone the wrong way.

Honestly, it isn't surprising for a new disciple to get lost on these mountainous roads the first couple of months. However, usually after a month or so, this will no longer occur. Even if a person has terrible memory; after constantly walking the same path hundreds of times, he will remember it by heart.

"Shi mei, walk slower!" A woman's voice appeared out of nowhere. Xuan Luo analyzed the voice; although there was a bit of frustration in her tone, he could also hear the love and care from it.

"Shi jie, come chase me!" Another voice could be heard. This one sounded very playful and sweet.

"Ai ya!" Suddenly, the girl yelped.

The female disciple wasn't watching where she was going, and she collided right into Xuan Luo. The impact caused her to fall down. Xuan Luo was slightly shocked and a bit shaken by the surprise.

"Shi mei, are you alright?" The other female rushed over as she helped the girl up. Then she furiously turned to Xuan Luo and blasted, "What's wrong with you? Couldn't you stepped aside when you noticed my shi mei?"

Xuan Luo was taken aback by the female's reaction. He didn't even do anything. Plus, he wasn't wearing the robe that belonged to Wu Dang.

The female noticed that as well, and started to develop suspicion on Xuan Luo.

"Shi jie, I am okay. I just fell down. I was careless. Don't blame him!" The girl tried to defuse the situation.

But the explanation was not good enough for the lady. She glared at Xuan Luo, her eyes filled with spite.

Xuan Luo does not know what to do. His mind felt clouded. He honestly did not do anything!

"I'm sorry. When I saw you running over, I wasn't paying attention." Xuan Luo sincerely apologized; although he knew that regardless of what he said, the lady was not going to accept it. But then again, he was a little at fault.

The thing is, the girl who fell down has an oval shaped face; her eyes were big and bright, pink lips, and was extremely pleasing to the eyes. Based on what he could tell, this girl did not have one bit of countryside

vibe to her. Instead, she seemed more exceptional. Hence, Xuan Luo was too mesmerized and did not pay attention.

"Don't...don't worry about it." The girl stuttered. She wasn't sure how she should react to Xuan Luo.

"Shi mei. You are too kind. We don't even know where he is from; whether he is good or bad. You can't go too easy on him!" The lady scowled as she continued looking at Xuan Luo through her accusing eyes.

"Shi jie, I don't think he's a bad guy!" The shi mei whispered. But when she saw the way her shi jie was looking at Xuan Luo, she no longer dared to utter another word.

Seeing this, Xuan Luo was fed up with the shi jie's attitude. He had already apologized. What more does she want from him?

"Sorry, miss. I didn't make her fall down on purpose. Please accept my apology." Xuan Luo tried once more.

"Look at you pretending. I bet you're from a different Clan...trying to steal our information!" The lady sharply retorted.

"Shi jie..."

"I have already apologized. And this lady here has accepted it. What more do you want?" Xuan Luo couldn't take it anymore. This lady was way too picky. Yes, he knows deep down he should be more careful since he is a new disciple, but he also has a temper. He wants to avoid trouble, but

this woman keeps pushing his buttons. He can't hold back anymore. His face darkens.

"Hummp! This is the area of Wu Dang's female disciples. Male disciples can only come here during unusual circumstances. I can tell based on your face you're up to no good!" With that, the lady reaches out her arm to grab onto Xuan Luo.

Xuan Luo finally realized why the shi jie was treating him so badly. He was in their territory! He avoided the lady's attack and smiled awkwardly, "Oh, I'm so sorry about that. I don't know the rules of Wu Dang. I just arrived yesterday!"

Xuan Luo explained himself right away because he didn't want the situation to escalate.

But the lady refused to listen. She continued to aim for Xuan Luo.

The attack continued for quite awhile, but Xuan Luo avoided every hit.

The shi mei tried to intervene, but her attempt had no effect. Thus, she could only watch from the side; as she nervously stomped her feet together.

Xuan Luo came to the realization that the situation was not going to end until he was captured. Therefore, he decided to avoid no longer. He allowed the lady to grab hold of his hands.

"Ha! You little pervert! You will see how I deal with you!"



"Shi jie, I don't think he came to our territory on purpose. You didn't even ask and you..." The shi mei hurriedly countered; her eyes were brimming with tears.

"Shi mei! Let's go. We'll bring him to the courtroom and see whether he will confess his crimes!" The lady tried to grab onto Xuan Luo's hands, but they were too big for her. Thus, she took off her belt (think of it like a scarf/cloth), and tied it around his wrists.

But honestly, if someone wanted to fight back, the belt would have been useless. She only managed to grab onto Xuan Luo because he had allowed her to....

-----

The courtroom is where Wu Dang punishes those who go against the rules of the Clan. The courtroom exists because rules are not enough to control everyone's behaviours. For example, if someone were to take off his/her clothes in public and was seen, he/she would be sent to the courtroom. The courtroom is considered a special institution of Wu Dang.

## Chapter 16 Martial Arts Dream

"Master! I have brought a pervert. He dared to come into our female territory!" The woman angrily glared at Xuan Luo as she spoke to an old man.

"Aaaii...Zi Yan, what happened?" The old man calmly responded.

"Master. This guy came to our residence acting all secretive. He also caused shi mei to fall!!"

"Okay, Zi Yan. Xiao Xue is the victim here and she hasn't said anything! Whereas, you, say too much. I don't know what to do with you!" This old man is used to Zi Yan's behaviour. As a result, he didn't question Xuan Luo's intentions.

Seeing this old man, Xuan Luo felt very strange. He doesn't know why, but the vibe he felt from the old man caused his heart to feel very heavy.

The moment he saw the old man, he felt this way. Perhaps the man was too prestigious.

The truth is, the old man is the one in charge of the courtroom. Thus, there is a powerful aura that surrounds him.

It was something that had developed as time went by. As a result,

disciples who have to face him actually suffer from more stress than when they have to face Zhang Men.

But the old man has a soft spot too. Like Zi Yan. Sometimes, Zi Yan acts like a spoil child around him.

The old man looked at Xuan Luo, "You're the new disciple of our Clan, right? Tian Yu Zi just left. I'm surprised to see you here now!"

The old man spoke calmly, but Xuan Luo could still feel his powerful aura. He was impressed.

"Huh? The old man came by?" Xuan Luo was surprised.

The old man looked at the belt around Xuan Luo's wrists and chuckled. He turned to Zi Yan and exclaimed, "Zi Yan! If this xiao xiong di wanted to escape, you seriously think this thin belt could control him? Clearly, he is letting you have your way. You!!!"

Zi Yan was in denial. She pouted and whined, "No! It's because I beat him. That's why he's tied up!"

The old man did not want to argue with Zi Yan. Instead, he lifted his finger in the air and the belt slit off. Xuan Luo was amazed. The man used no weapons, yet he was able to slit the belt without hurting him from such a far distance. He was definitely a highly skilled expert.

But what Xuan Luo didn't know was that the technique is actually quite simple. As long as one can master their nei li, he/she will be able to do it.

Xuan Luo could do it too.

Zi Yan is pouting and is extremely unhappy with the outcome. However, she couldn't do anything about it.

"Okay. Xiao Xue, bring this xiao xiong di back to Tian Yu Zi's residence!" The old man could tell Xuan Luo had gotten lost. He had arrived at the female's residence by mistake. Hence, the old man did not see a need to punish Xuan Luo.

"Master!!!" Zi Yan angrily stomped her feet.

-----

With Xiao Xue's help, Xuan Luo finally arrived back at Tian Yu Zi's residence.

"Um..sorry about that.." Xiao Xue mumbled. "Shi jie is like that.. please don't mind her."

Xiao Xue spoke very quietly, but Xuan Luo heard every word. He has a weak spot for cute and shy girls like her.

"Don't worry about it. I accidentally came into your territory and caused you to fall! I should be the one apologizing." Xuan Luo smiled awkwardly.

"You're back!" Tian Yu Zi came out of his house.

Then he noticed the girl next to Xuan Luo and joked, "Wow! Impressive! You went out for a walk and brought back a girl!"

Xiao Xue immediately turns red. She looks down and doesn't say a word.

"Old man! Don't say that! I was lost. She brought me back!" Xuan Luo was irritated.

"Okay. You guys talk. I'm going back inside!" Tian Yu Zi laughed.

"Umm..I'm going to go now..." Xiao Xue whispered.

-----

"Old man! When are you going to start teaching me Martial Arts??" Xuan Luo impatiently asked.

Ever since he watched the battle between Wu Di and Xuan Yuan Duan Ai, his desire to learn Martial Arts has gone up even more.

While he was in Qian Deng Zhen, he had no exposure to any Martial Artists. All the villagers used brute force to fight. When they fought, they had no rhythm or style. They just struck whenever they could.

It wasn't until now that he has arrived at Wu Dang does he know the importance of style. Every movement has a purpose. Also, he has learnt he could combine different styles together. Depending on the situation,

the style can contribute to a different outcome.

Tian Yu Zi did not reply. After pondering for awhile, he asked, "What is Martial Arts to you? Why do you want to learn it? What is your goal?"

Xuan Luo does not know how to respond. Thus, Tian Yu Zi decided to give Xuan Luo some time and space to think about it. He leaves the house and heads to cool off under the shade of a tree.

After hearing the three questions, Xuan Luo goes into a state of deep thought.

Yeah...why do I want to learn Martial Arts? What is my motive? And what is Martial Arts?

Xuan Luo keeps repeating these questions in his heart, but he still could not find the answer.

Suddenly, his mind wanders off and he felt as if he has arrived somewhere else. Everything was dark. The only thing he could see was his body.

He really wanted to escape, but he couldn't see where he was going. He walked aimlessly in the dark...

It's as if there was no end. He has no idea when he will arrive at this destination.

Martial Arts. What is it? Why do I want to learn it?

Finally, his mind flew to Qian Deng Zhen; the day when Guan Shan Jue was covered with cuts and bruises.

“That dream. My dream! That incident...yes! I need to find out about my past. I need to have the ability. I need to become strong. That’s the reason why I want to learn Martial Arts!”

Xuan Luo bellowed, loud and firm, “My dream! My Martial Arts dream!!”

Then, he opened his eyes. Determination shone through.

Tian Yu Zi could hear Xuan Luo from where he was. He smiled.

# Chapter 17 Discussion

Hearing Xuan Luo's determined howl, Tian Yu Zi smiled.

Xuan Luo came out from the house, with the answer within his heart. If one were to look closely, his whole body language has changed.

A better way to explain it would be, Xuan Luo was originally like a lost sheep. He had no directions. But now, after realizing his true "WHY" from Tian Yu Zi's questions, it's as if he has transformed into a fierce tiger. He will use his abilities to do his very best.

No matter what obstacles are in his way, he will not be stopped. The determination comes from his goals. Now he has a purpose! (Like they say, if you aim for nothing, you will hit nothing).

Tian Yu Zi is sitting on a rocking chair, relaxing, "Your heart has the answer to my questions now, right?"

"Yes." Xuan Luo was about to tell Tian Yu Zi his thoughts, but the moment he opened his mouth, Tian Yu Zi interrupted him.

"Those thoughts are for yourself. No need to say them out!"

Since Tian Yu Zi said that, Xuan Luo didn't see a need to continue. At least, he is no longer lost. He has come in tune with his deepest thoughts.



Hence, his respect for Tian Yu Zi is slowly going up.

"Okay. Mastering Martial Arts isn't something that can happen in a short time. Since you have your mindset now, you need to persist. Here at Wu Dang, there are many different types of styles you can choose from. We can focus on your fist, palm, sword, and step. Take some time to think about what you want to focus on first."

"Can't I pick more?" Xuan Luo has thick skin.

Tian Yu Zi rolled his eyes at Xuan Luo. "Pick more? You could.. but first you have to be good in one! Or else it will be a mess. The point is to be very skillful at one type first."

"Oh!" Xuan Luo knows he is too greedy. Thus, he responded with only a word and remained in silence.

"Honestly, nei li is only to assist you. To some extent, nei li can raise your ability, but the style is also very important. That's why I will not expect you to practice nei li. I will be pinpointing your style. Obviously, if you want to, you can practice nei li on the side."

Hearing these words, Xuan Luo couldn't help but blurted, "But don't you need nei li to be consider a true wu zhe?"

"Bullshit!" Tian Yu Zi was angered by Xuan Luo's false assumption.

"Let me ask you. When you are about to strike, if you want to use nei li, don't you need to use it on something? You need to have a foundation to

strike.”

“Yes.”

“Now let me ask you again. If your style is poor, even with a strong nei li, can you hit your opponent?”

Xuan Luo felt troubled. But wasn't the ranking in Jiang hu based on a person's nei li? He has never heard a person become famous in Jiang hu for not having nei li.

Seeing Xuan Luo's confused expression, Tian Yu Zi elaborated, “Nei li is to assist you. Obviously, it can be a great help. But practicing nei li has a very serious flaw. And this flaw can kill you.”

“Currently, most people think practicing nei li is the most important. They use style to assist. But in my opinion, that's wrong. It doesn't matter how strong your nei li is if your style is weak. If you cannot even strike your opponent, what use is the nei li? It would be useless.”

“Perhaps initially, nei li may seem to have a very noticeable effect. But the more you practice, the less noticeable it will become. Plus, a person's plasticity only lasts until sixteen years of age. After that, it decreases dramatically. That's why I say practice the outer first, before working on the inner!”

Xuan Luo doesn't know how to respond to Tian Yu Zi's words.

Tian Yu Zi sighed, “Wu Dang has now split into two separate groups.

One group focuses on nei li, while the other focuses on style. This situation has already continued for many years..."

"But it's within the same Clan? Why is there a split?"

"I know. We're in the same Clan. What's the point of splitting? But that's what's happening right now." Tian Yu Zi grunted.

"Anyhow, out of the four styles (fist, palm, sword and step), step is a definite must. Do you know why?"

"Probably because it makes running away easier?" Xuan Luo joked. His response almost caused Tian Yu Zi to spit blood.

"Running!? To some extent! But the most important reason is during combat; when you're fighting an opponent in a close distance, if your steps are faster, then you can disappear like a ghost. It makes it almost impossible for someone to hurt you. Whereas, you can use steps as an advantage and hurt others. Of course, if you fail to win, you could also run away and make it difficult for them to catch you. Hehe!" Tian Yu Zi giggled, changing from his former serious expression.

Xuan Luo nodded. He is used to using his fists to fight, but definitely understood the importance of steps. When it comes to battling in a close distance, a fist and a kick doesn't guarantee victory.

"But in our Jiang hu, we don't actually have a recorded version of steps. Therefore, it really depends on your intuition. If you can figure it out on your own, that's amazing. If not, then that's that!"

“As for fist and palm, those two have similar purpose. So when you are practicing your fist, you can also practice your palm; since both of them are part of your body and it relies on the hand to receive and transmit. Aside from the attack itself, everything else is practically the same.”

“Mastering the sword is more challenging though. A weapon is an extension of the body. The body must lead the weapon. It is much harder. But the sword is like a chief to a hundred soldier (This is really hard to explain but I hope you understand). It has its advantages. There are many different combinations and it can definitely be a great threat to your opponent. But again, mastering the sword is not something that happens in a day. Remember, the sword is an extension to the body. Hence, I urge you to master the fist first. When your arms, fists, and legs are flexible and you’re able to control and release your power with ease, then you can practice the sword. But I reckon your physique is quite good. Thus, practicing the fist shouldn’t take too long. It wouldn’t take long until you hit the requirements to practice the sword!”

Xuan Luo attentively listened to everything Tian Yu Zi said. He nodded in agreement to most, but when it came to the nei li and the style part, he is still conflicted.

“Okay. Go and think about it. Prepare a plan to make your Martial Arts dream come true!” Tian Yu Zi then dozes off on his rocking chair.

## Chapter 18 Practicing

In Tian Yu Zi's opinion, Xuan Luo seemed to understand...but not really. However, compared to before, he is much better; originally, Xuan Luo was like a blank slate.

Xuan Luo still has doubt within his heart, but since Tian Yu Zi was asleep, he did not want to disturb him. Hence, he went off to the side to reflect on what he has learnt.

"A sword fighter should practice the fist first; the fist is part of our body, while the sword is an extension of our body's outer strength..."

But Xuan Luo was conflicted. Why can't he just go straight to practicing the sword? Why must he practice the fist first? The question remained unanswered inside Xuan Luo's stomach.

Tian Yu Zi's nap lasted the whole afternoon. By the time he awoke, it was night time. The night sky of Wu Dang has no firelight. There was only starlight. By now, most of the disciples had gone to bed. In the Clan, most of them are disciplined to wake up at 5am and go to bed by 9pm.

Right now, Wu Dang is covered in a peaceful silence.

Xuan Luo's habit of climbing up onto the roof for star gazing has not changed. However, the roofs of the buildings are so high in Wu Dang, and

he cannot climb up on his own. He tried looking for a ladder, but failed to find one. Thus, Xuan Luo sighed as he look up at the brightly lit sky.

But how could he give up on such a beautiful sight? Xuan Luo didn't care anymore. He lied down on the ground, with his two arms behind his head, and looked up the evening sky.

He felt satisfied and at peace.

At that moment, Tian Yu Zi popped his old wrinkly face in front of Xuan Luo and made a silly expression. He giggled and said, "Young man, it's not good to sleep on the floor!"

"Go away, don't block my stars!" Xuan Luo grumpily replied.

"Haha. Go watch it from the roof! There is no "feel" if you're watching from the ground." Tian Yu Zi teased.

"I want to, but the roof is too high. I can't get up there!" Xuan Luo made a gesture with his hand.

"Ohhhh, so that's why you're here. Follow me!"

Seeing Tian Yu Zi like this, Xuan Luo wasn't sure what he was up to. Yet, at the same time, he could kind of guess.

Once Xuan Luo was standing upright, Tian Yu Zi grabbed onto his clothes and pushed up. Xuan Luo felt like he was flying, and next thing he

knew, he was on the roof!

He was pleasantly surprised.

Next, Tian Yu Zi used one leg to leap from the ground; he twirled and landed on the roof right next to him.

As Xuan Luo lied down looking at the sky, his face is covered with bliss. He feels like he can forget everything. There is only him. That feeling feels sooooo good.

Seeing Xuan Luo smiling, Tian Yu Zi grinned. He lied down next to Xuan Luo and softly whispered, "Every star represents a person. The star above your head represents you...."

Tian Yu Zi spoke very softly, and Xuan Luo quietly listened. Soon, his eyes slowly closed and his breathing became very calm as he fell in a deep slumber.

—

Morning. As the first bit of sunshine sprinkled on Xuan Luo, he turned his body around and fell right off the roof!

Bang!

Xuan Luo didn't have any time to react. Before he could do anything, he had already violently fell off the roof. He landed flat on the ground.

Tian Yu Zi had woken up very early. Last night, he did not want to disturb Xuan Luo's sleep. While he was watching him, he felt as if Xuan Luo was his child. He really wanted to protect him, and couldn't bear to disrupt him. Hence, he left him on the roof. Of course, there was also another reason for him to leave Xuan Luo on the roof. Tian Yu Zi is full of mischief and loves joking around. If it weren't for his appearance, you would have thought he was a child. Then again, Tian Yu Zi could be considered an old child. Haha.

"Owww!" Xuan Luo wailed. He grabbed onto his waist, and struggled to get up.

It was fortunate that Xuan Luo has a rather strong physique. The fall did not caused any internal damage. The only pain he sustained was the outer impact from the ground.

Xuan Luo looked around his surroundings and saw Tian Yu Zi practicing his fists. Hence, he did not go up to interrupt. After deeply thinking about it yesterday, he has decided not to practice nei li for now; since even if he does not purposely practice it, nei li will still increase on its own. Obviously, if he purposely practiced it, the progress will definitely be faster. However, his style would suffer.

"Hehe. You're awake!? Come practice with me!" Tian Yu Zi is happy to see how beat up Xuan Luo looked.

Xuan Luo was a bit speechless. Originally, he wanted to yell at Tian Yu Zi for bring him up the roof but not helping him down, but he decided to leave it.



"I don't know what you're practicing. How can I practice with you?" Xuan Luo rebutted.

"Don't worry about it. Just follow my movements!" With that, Tian Yu Zi goes to the center of his courtyard and started practicing once more.

Tian Yu Zi purposely went slower so Xuan Luo could imitate his movements. However, Xuan Luo has never come across something like this before. Therefore, his movements were very rigid and rough.

Although the fist form itself looked simple, and it was only a couple of movements, each time when the movement changed, Xuan Luo felt like he couldn't keep up. There were a lot of fine details in between. It took him a lot of effort to catch everything.

After following Tian Yu Zi two to three times, Xuan Luo was able to complete the whole set on his own. However, he was still very rusty. In addition, his fists only demonstrated form, but no meaning.

Xuan Luo was at a stage where he only knew how to use his rigid movements to complete a set.

Tian Yu Zi had stopped practicing and turned around to watch Xuan Luo. The smile on his face remained. As he watched Xuan Luo practice, he didn't interrupt.

Softly, he murmured and nodded, "Hmm, not bad. You've already grasped the basics of fists. Definitely a Martial Arts material!"

Xuan Luo did not hear the compliment because he was too immersed in his practice.

Although Xuan Luo's movements were stiff, with practice, he became smoother and smoother. Once he is able to find the meaning of the form, he will have mastered the basic level. However, form is easy, meaning is hard. That's the difficult thing about Martial Arts. Having form but no meaning is like "all show and no go" (haha, sorry, this is very hard to translate).

## Chapter 19 Tai Chi Fist

"Hmm, not bad. Looks like you have a good foundation. But it's still missing something. You have style but no meaning. Regardless, good job!" The moment Xuan Luo finished practicing, Tian Yu Zi spoke up.

There was still much for Xuan Luo to understand, but hearing the compliment, Xuan Luo gave himself a thumbs up. He proudly beamed, "Of course!"

"But old man, what kind of fist is this? You're not seriously teaching me this, are you?"

"Haha. What's wrong with this fist?" Tian Yu Zi refuted.

"This fist style is so soft. I mean, I can see me using this to maintain good health, but in a battle? No way. I wouldn't be able to harm my opponents!" Xuan Luo fumed. Originally, when he started practicing, he thought the moves didn't link up too well. But after he finished the whole set, he felt like the fist had no ferocious power at all.

Tian Yu Zi scowled at Xuan Luo. "Are you kidding me? This is Wu Dang's most well known Tai Chi fist! I can't believe you're saying this! You're driving me nuts!"

Hearing this, Xuan Luo was stunned, "This fist style?? How is it

possible?"

Actually, it isn't surprising for Xuan Luo to say this. He was observing Tian Yu Zi, and he did managed to imitate the softness of the fist.

"You! Even if the treasure is in front of you, I bet you cannot even get it. Use your own fist style and fight me then!"

Thus, Xuan Luo changed his posture and quickly got into fight mode. He lifted his fist and headed for Tian Yu Zi.

Tian Yu Zi also had his fists out. But when his arm struck Xuan Luo, he turned his wrist and pushed Xuan Luo's fist away.

Xuan Luo didn't believe in bad luck, thus he went back for more. But this time, instead of striking him directly, he is trying to find the weakness of Tian Yu Zi.

But just because he isn't getting close on purpose, it doesn't mean Tian Yu Zi won't get close. Tian Yu Zi took a step forward and his right hand once again contacted Xuan Luo's hand. Just as Tian Yu Zi was about to grab onto his hand, Xuan Luo quickly tried to escape by using force.

But Tian Yu Zi's flexible wrist made it impossible for Xuan Luo to pull back his hand. It was as if Tian Yu Zi was a magnet; sucking his arm from him.

Seeing this made Xuan Luo realized how powerful this soft fist style was.

Xuan Luo felt like he was being controlled. Neither of his hands were obeying his orders. His wrists were being trapped by Tian Yu Zi's wrists. It looked like they were trying to draw a diagram in air or something. Xuan Luo stared at Tian Yu Zi's wrists and realized they were drawing circles in the air.

Tian Yu Zi then flipped his palms to separate their distance and pushed his arms down. Xuan Luo had no chance to fight back, and was pushed back by force. He took a couple of steps backwards before he was able to stabilize himself.

"How do you feel?" Tian Yu Zi asked as he returned his feet to his original position.

"Old man. How come I felt like I had strength but I couldn't release any of it? My hands wanted to fight and escape, but no matter what I tried, I couldn't. Why?" Xuan Luo was frustrated and slightly upset.

"Haha. That's Tai Chi fist; it borrows strength to hit. We use the smallest strength, yet we can defeat the strongest people." Tian Yu Zi laughed as he explained.

"Now you can't say Tai Chi fist is soft and weak anymore! No attacking abilities?! If you are fighting a strong opponent, it will make you stronger. But even if you have a weak opponent, you're still strong! That's Tai Chi!"

"Tai Chi fist has thirteen movements: raise, embrace ball (I know, it sounds so odd), single push, explore, support, pounce, carry, separate, cloud, transformation, double push, lower, and pull back. These thirteen

movements combine Daoist exercises with three types of nei gong xin fa. These thirteen movements are based on a trainer's body and the eight arteries. The eight arteries are connected to our five organs. That's why these thirteen movements have five steps and eight spells. (Okay, this paragraph is so confusing. I'm sorry guys. It's very hard to translate).

"Don't look down on these thirteen movements. It may appear to be weak, but once you have mastered it, you will be extremely powerful even without nei li. But nowadays, no one wants to learn this. Most of the disciples from Wu Dang only want to practice the sword!" Tian Yu Zi sighed to show his disappointment. Very few disciples would listen to his theory. Therefore, when he saw that Xuan Luo wasn't able to release nei li (from the evaluation), his eyes lit up and he decided to use Xuan Luo as a tester.

Although he found out Xuan Luo can in fact produce nei li afterwards, it didn't matter. Tian Yu Zi had decided Xuan Luo was his to keep.

"Wow! That impressive?" Xuan Luo was still skeptical.

"Of course. Tai Chi fist doesn't just train the body. It also trains the heart. Earlier, while you were practicing, you had style but no meaning. But you're already very good for a beginner. Especially because you were only following me without me directing you. Now I'm going to teach you how to properly practice the Tai Chi fist."

"Style must be combined with meaning; meaning must be combined with energy, energy must be combined with the spirit. All of this must be mixed together. Only then will your style come alive. When you are making your movements, it must not be choppy. Flow like the clouds and release gently. Your movement should be soft but as if you have needles

within them. Yin and Yang must combine. When breathing, be natural. Everything should be well distributed. Breathing should always return back to normal. When practicing, you must remember all this.” Tian Yu Zi wisely gazed at Xuan Luo.

“When I do not move, I am as is. But once I move, I shall amaze the world!” Xuan Luo said. He seemed to understand some stuff.

“Yes. When you do not move, you are as is. But once you move, you will shock the world. By the way, we have many sword spells in Wu Dang. When you have mastered Tai Chi fist, I will tell you about it. With your potential, you will only need a few years to become a success at Tai Chi fist.” Tian Yu Zi happily stated.

“Success? What is considered ‘success’”? Xuan Luo was curious.

“I’ll let you know when the time is right. Starting from today, practice with me every morning. We will battle afterwards. When you are able to touch my gourd, then you have passed.” Tian Yu Zi said, and then went off to somewhere else.

[tl: (the gourd looks like this: <http://auction.artxun.com/pic-425544777-0.html> and it usually hangs around the waist area)



## Chapter 20 Two years

In the courtyard, a teenager wearing a white Taoist uniform stood as still as a pine tree. As he stood, his eyes were filled with fury as he stared at the old man in front of him. On the other hand, the old man's face did not show much emotions; except his smile hung on.

Two years had gone by very quickly. During these two years, Xuan Luo basically did not leave the courtyard. Each day, he spends the whole day practicing the Tai Chi fist. He has become very skillful at it; from the boy who only had style and no meaning, he has now gone through a massive transformation.

The old man was Tian Yu Zi. His attire had not changed, but his famous smile remained on his face.

"Hmm.. not bad. Looks like you have improved a lot these past two years!" Tian Yu Zi chuckled.

"I have reached 'success' by now, right? Old man. When are you going to teach me sword?!?" Xuan Luo's face was solemn.

"Haha. I don't think you have touched my gourd yet!?" Tian Yu Zi teased.

For the past two years, Xuan Luo and Tian Yu Zi battled daily. They used



the Tai Chi fist, but each time Tian Yu Zi always defeated Xuan Luo.

But the failures did not affect Xuan Luo's confidence. He believed in himself, thus, he practiced with all his might. Initially, he would spend most of his time studying the Tai Chi fist. Perhaps, his method was the issue. During the first few months, Xuan Luo spent a massive amount of time on perfecting his movements -but he just couldn't figure out the essence of Tai Chi.

Just when Xuan Luo felt like he had lost all hope, Tian Yu Zi told him, "Regardless of which Martial Arts you're learning, it starts from the heart. If your heart is not still, then you will never be able to grasp the essence."

Tian Yu Zi's words helped immensely. Xuan Luo felt as if Tian Yu Zi had opened a window in his dimly lit room.

From then on, Xuan Luo no longer pursued higher skill training. Instead, he spent the majority of his time learning to calm his heart down. After his heart was calm, he would start the Tai Chi fist.

Eventually, he only needed to spend a fraction of time calming his heart, but the result was much more favourable compared to before. Within these two years, Xuan Luo has reached the border of 'success'. He just has to pierce through a bit more, and he will succeed.

Hearing Tian Yu Zi's taunt, Xuan Luo thinly smiled, "Old man. Haven't you noticed? Recently, I have only missed your gourd by a slight bit. Watch me!"

Xuan Luo's shadow flashed by, and he approached Tian Yu Zi using some type of footwork. He was like a ghost.

These steps were something Xuan Luo figured out on his own while he was practicing Tai Chi fist. The steps complemented the movement of the fist; forward, backward, brush, and cross over. When he combined the movements, he realized he had created the Tai ji ba gua diagram. Therefore, he spent a lot of time improving his footwork.

Tian Yu Zi was caught offguard. At that moment, he could see Xuan Luo's hand reaching for his gourd, and he quickly disappeared. He almost became a victim of Xuan Luo's sneaky attack!

Since his first attempt failed, Xuan Luo quickly disappeared again and started spinning in circles around Tian Yu Zi. Xuan Luo doesn't believe in giving up. He will keep on fighting despite setbacks.

"Young man, you have improved!" Tian Yu Zi giggled. Then, he became serious and started chasing Xuan Luo around in the circle.

At that moment, Xuan Luo suddenly turned around and he had a crafty grin on his face.

Tian Yu Zi realized he had fallen for Xuan Luo's trap. But it was too late. Xuan Luo used his amazing steps and everything was a blur. Then, the gourd disappeared from Tian Yu Zi's waist.

From a distance, Xuan Luo started waving the gourd in Tian Yu Zi's face. "Haha. Old man! I have stolen it!"

Tian Yu Zi's face turned red. With thick skin, he said, "That doesn't count. You cheated!! We're supposed to fight face to face!"

Tian Yu Zi's childlike side is acting up again. Xuan Luo was used to it. These past two years, either Tian Yu Zi acted serious like an authority figure, or he would act like a child. Sometimes, even crazier than a child.

"You said as long as I touch it, it counts! But the past few times I have touched it, you said it didn't count. This time, I have stolen it. How can you not count it? Seriously, old man, your thick skin is thicker than the Great Wall!" Xuan Luo is slightly annoyed. Ever since he had figured out his secret steps, he had used it to get near Tian Yu Zi. There were a couple of times that he had touched the gourd, but each time, Tian Yu Zi said it didn't count. Hence, he decided to take the whole gourd so Tian Yu Zi couldn't deny any longer. Yet, Tian Yu Zi still refused to acknowledge his action.

"Okay, fine. You win. I'll forcefully give you a pass." Tian Yu Zi was embarrassed. But it's true, Xuan Luo's fist has not reached 'success' yet. He only managed to get his gourd due to his footwork. That's why he is refuting. Partly, it's because he enjoys teasing, but mainly, it's for Xuan Luo's own good.

Sometimes, Tian Yu Zi feels very fortunate to have gotten Xuan Luo from Zhang Men. The more time he spent with Xuan Luo, the more he felt as if he had found gold. In regards to his methods and insights (the fact that practicing the body is better and more important than mastering your xin fa), Xuan Luo was the only person who did not disagree and was willing to try it out. Most importantly, Xuan Luo is naturally talented. Tian Yu Zi only has to give him a slight clue, and Xuan Luo could figure out the

rest on his own.

“Hehe. So when are you going to teach me sword?” Xuan Luo happily threw the gourd away and skipped towards Tian Yu Zi. Xuan Luo had waited for this day for far too long. These past two years were extremely tough. He felt as if he had been separated from the world; all he did was practice and more practice.

“My gourd!!!” Tian Yu Zi wailed and quickly ran towards his lovely gourd. At that moment, all Xuan Luo felt was a breeze of wind. Next thing he knew, Tian Yu Zi appeared behind him holding his gourd.

All along, Tian Yu Zi had been super secretive with his abilities. Each time Xuan Luo felt as if he will be able to touch the gourd, Tian Yu Zi’s abilities would go up. Basically, no matter what, Tian Yu Zi would always been on his level. Honestly, today, Tian Yu Zi did go easy on Xuan Luo. If he hadn’t, Xuan Luo would have been defeated.

“You little monkey. Don’t you know my gourd is my baby? How dare you throw it away so carelessly? Ahh you’re driving me nuts!” Tian Yu Zi whined.

Seeing Tian Yu Zi’s poor reaction, Xuan Luo was afraid he would change his mind about teaching him the sword spells. Thus, he quickly ran behind Tian Yu Zi and rubbed his back and massaged his arms.

“We shall talk about the swords another time. Right now, I need to tell you something more important!” Tian Yu Zi turned around and looked straight into Xuan Luo’s eyes.

“What is it?”

## Chapter 21 Chun Yang Palace and Zi Yang Palace

“What is it?” Xuan Luo halted. During the past two years, aside from when Tian Yu Zi was coaching him, Tian Yu Zi usually has a mischievous smile on his face. Therefore, whenever Tian Yu Zi becomes serious, he really pays attention. Even if he has questions, he will wait until Tian Yu Zi is finished.

“Do you recall when you first arrived, I told you that Wu Dang has been separated into two different groups? This is what I want to talk about.” Tian Yu Zi continued, “The two groups are Chun Yang Palace and Zi Yang Palace; Chun Yang Palace focuses nei li, while using style to assist. Whereas Zi Yang Palace focuses on style, while using nei li to assist.

Xuan Luo felt a little uncomfortable hearing this. In fact, he has heard other disciples mentioned Chun Yang Palace and Zi Yang Palace before. However, it was during a time while he was practicing behind the mountain. He accidentally heard about it, so he didn’t asked for details. But since Tian Yu Zi is bring it up, it must mean the issues between the two groups are very prominent.

“I’m actually the elder that represents Zi Yang Palace. Three days from now, Zi Yang Palace and Chun Yang Palace are going to hold a competition. This competition only happens once every three years.” As Tian Yu Zi spoke, he intently looked at Xuan Luo. “Nowadays, Martial Artists just want to be fast. Hence, they all want to choose the path to practice nei li. There are very few who would support my path because I focus on outer strength. The type of pain you have to endure from my path is not what most people can handle. Everyday, I make you do the same movement a thousand times. Most think it’s boring and senseless. On the other hand, for nei li, as long as you calm your heart down and

meditate, you will see results in a matter of days. That's why Zi Yang Palace has so few disciples. Our people are less than one percent of Chun Yang Palace 's. It's definitely lonely here."

Tian Yu Zi deeply sighed. Although everyone is from the same Clan, the separation is extremely huge. He can't do anything about it either.

"As a result, each time we have a competition, Zi Yang Palace always loses. Originally, I wasn't going to tell you this. But your talent is excellent, and your natural abilities are great. Initially, I thought it would take you at least four years to reach 'success' for the Tai Chi fist. Yet, within two years, you have already hit close to it. And it's funny how the time coincidentally matches with the competition. That's why I am telling you this now. I hope you can represent our Zi Yang Palace to compete in the competition."

Once Tian Yu Zi stopped talking, Xuan Luo loudly exclaimed, "Old man, are you serious? You want me to participate? Are you sure you don't have a fever?"

Xuan Luo's joking tone caused Tian Yu Zi's forehead to show more wrinkles. Tian Yu Zi knocks on Xuan Luo's head.

"Prepare for the competition. You're my disciple I brought up on my own. No matter what, you have to give me face! Or else, don't even think about learning the sword!" Tian Yu Zi grumbled.

Hearing this threat, Xuan Luo whined, "Noooo. Old man. You can't do this to me!"

“It doesn’t matter what you say! I have decided!” Tian Yu Zi firmly retorted. He is not going to allow Xuan Luo to even think about it. “In terms of the competition rules, I will let you know when I bring you to Zi Yang Dian later.”

Xuan Luo was sulky. Originally, he thought he was going to finally learn the sword. Instead, Tian Yu Zi is giving him another hard task. But what can he do? Tian Yu Zi is his Master. Although he always forced him to do things, he is used to it. After spending so much time with him, he has gotten attached to Tian Yu Zi. No matter how much he may argue with him, in the end, he will still accept and do as he says.

As a matter of fact, according to the evaluation, Xuan Luo wasn’t able to demonstrate nei li when he was being tested by Zhang Men. Therefore, he would have only been able to learn wai gong; which was under Tian Yu Zi anyway. But there are very few who are as naturally gifted as Xuan Luo is. Hence, Tian Yu Zi decided right off the bat Xuan Luo would be his disciple (I don’t know why the author keeps bring this up, I get it! You said it like 4 times or something). Surprisingly, it turned out that Xuan Luo could learn nei gong xin fa. But alas, they were going to continue this wrong path.

But Xuan Luo’s mindset was still quite flexible. He was able to agree with Tian Yu Zi’s theory. Therefore, he was willing to spend a vast majority of time practicing the Tai Chi fist. He was able to learn the true essence of Tai Chi. From being unfortunate to fortunate, he even figured out a footwork on his own.

Tian Yu Zi had mentioned many times about the importance of steps. In Jiang hu, there are rarely any books on steps. However, while they are practicing, they need it. Because without steps, someone can easily see through the sequence and break it.



During these past two years, Xuan Luo didn't purposely try to cultivate nei li. The only time he meditated was before he practiced the Tai Chi fist. He would meditate to control his breathing and calm his heart down. Yet, this simple action still increased his nei li substantially.

Xuan Luo had stopped going through the ragged book (the one from the forest, Chapter 1), but based on his gut, the ragged book was definitely not as simple as it looks. Perhaps Wu Dang's xin fa cannot even compete with it. Think about it, what type of nei gong xin fa would initially cause so much pain at the beginning?

Xuan Luo had memorized the xin fa from the ragged book. However, there was something that he missed. That is, the nei li has different levels. One time, as Xuan Luo was meditating, he remembered that the ragged book indicated that there were nine levels. Each time one reaches a level, his/her core would explode and restore once more. Each time it explodes, it's as if a butterfly is coming out of the shell of a caterpillar.

The first level trains the body; the muscles increase in strength and the outer power accelerates. This process is very obvious. The second level trains the bones. The strength of the bones accelerates. As for the third level, Xuan Luo hasn't figured it out yet. But he knows, the answer will be revealed to him once he has gone through that level.

"Hurry and catch up with me. Zi Yang Palace isn't that easy to find!" Tian Yu Zi says as he looked at Xuan Luo's zoned out face.

"Okay...coming.." Xuan Luo sighed. He followed behind Tian Yu Zi, and headed towards Zi Yang Palace.

## Chapter 22 Cold and Empty

### Zi Yang Palace

Zi Yang Palace rests on Wu Dang's northeast direction, while Chun Yang Palace is on the northwest direction. The two palaces are quite far apart from each other. Wu Dang is known for their balance of Yin and Yang. Therefore, even the architectures here have to be balanced. However, the ba gua diagram cannot be totally balanced (since it is round).

Xuan Luo did not realize Zi Yang Palace was in such a bad shape until he had arrived. However, he has never seen Chun Yang Palace either; so it wasn't like he had something to compare with. But this sight alone was already blinding to his eyes.

Old and rusty. Everything was covered in dust. It seems like no one had bothered to sweep the place. Xuan Luo fixedly gawked at Tian Yu Zi. He is able to understand though. After all, Tian Yu Zi was a sloppy man. The place a sloppy man looks after must be sloppy as well. Unconsciously, Xuan Luo's respect for Tian Yu Zi went down a couple levels.

"Hi Master!" As Tian Yu Zi walked inside, the disciples acknowledged him. At the same time, their tone sounded very feeble. Xuan Luo saw a familiar figure at the corner.

Zi Yang Palace's courtyard is much bigger than Tian Yu Zi's. But the place was cold and empty. It is quite likely that the few people that were

present were all these is.

Tian Yu Zi was appalled by the disciples' attitude. There were no fire within them. They weren't even practicing their daily routines. He angrily stormed, "What the f\*\*\* are you guys doing? We have a big battle up ahead and you guys are just slacking?!?!!!" (I added the swearing to make him sound more angry, haha)

Tian Yu Zi was honestly enraged. Even Xuan Luo has never seen him this angry.

No one was practicing in the courtyard. But it wasn't like they were slacking either. Instead, everyone just looked unmotivated and weak; as if they have suffered from a trauma of some sort.

"Master, Chun Yang Palace's people came again. We are no match for them!" A disciple stepped up and helplessly stated.

"Yes, they bully us whenever they feel like it. But..." Other voices started chirping in.

Tian Yu Zi could feel his anger boiling up inside of him. They already have such few disciples, yet the other group still comes to pick fights!? It's intolerable. He could already tell who was behind all this. The conflicting views between the two groups have been here for ages. Neither side is willing to budge or back off.

"It's Wu Ya Zi, the old bastard, isn't it?" Tian Yu Zi bitterly screeched.

The disciples did not know how to respond to their Master's question, and thus, did not utter a word.

At that moment, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai stood up from his corner. "Wu Ya Zi didn't come. But Wu Di came. For the past two years, he frequently comes to pick fights!"

Wu Di and Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's hatred towards each other began two years ago. As a result, whenever he has an opportunity, Wu Di would come to Zi Yang Palace to create chaos. He especially targetted Xuan Yuan Duan Ai.

However, based on the Clan's rules, disciples are not allowed to kill each other. But, if you harm a disciple during a contest or practicing, that would be considered "an accident". Hence, Wu Di found every reason to fight Xuan Yuan Duan Ai; which ended up affecting the whole Zi Yang Palace.

"Hehe. Xuan Yuan xiong! Long time no see!" As Xuan Yuan Duan Ai got up from his corner, Xuan Luo smiled and he approached him.

Clearly, Xuan Luo recognized Xuan Yuan Duan Ai. However, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai seemed to have no recognition of Xuan Luo. He was confused. "Me? Do I know you?"

Xuan Luo wanted to bang his head on the wall. Acting like a dogskin plaster, he pressed, "Don't you remember? Two years ago... you were fighting Wu Di at the Ba Gua stage! I approached you afterwards..."

"I do not remember." Xuan Yuan Duan Ai coldly replied.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's attitude caused Xuan Luo to feel discouraged. That day, when he first saw Xuan Yuan Duan Ai, for some strange reason, his heart felt a tingle. The tingle wasn't something that occurred between a man and a woman. Instead, it was as if they have some type of relationship (I swear, it's his long lost bro. lol)

"Wu Ya Zi doesn't even know how to properly discipline his own disciples! I am so mad!" Tian Yu Zi exploded like lightning, with exaggerated movements.

"What really happened, Duan Ai xiong?" Xuan Luo disregarded Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's reaction towards him. He could understand a bit through Tian Yu Zi, but he still wanted a more thorough explanation.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai rolled his eyes at Xuan Luo and ignored him. It wasn't that he was pretending not to remember Xuan Luo though. He honestly could not recall at first. However, after Xuan Luo prompted him, his mind faintly remembered who he was.

"Elder, Chun Yang Palace's people have always been like this. Our conflicts have been here for ages. You also know about this!" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai continued to ignore Xuan Luo and spoke directly to Tian Yu Zi.

"Humpt! I'm going to go find Wu Ya Zi in a bit!" Tian Yu Zi exclaimed. "You guys better help me win this battle that is taking place three days from now!"

Everyone stared blankly at Tian Yu Zi, and the atmosphere was quite awkward.

Win the battle? Is he nuts? Everyone knows Chun Yang Palace is a big group. Pretty much anyone who could cultivate nei li would join Chun Yang Palace. Each year, they have new blood coming in continuously. It's incomparable to Zi Yang Palace.

"The competition is just a one on one battle and a group battle. Why are you all looking so stressed and depressed? You seriously think we have no one to represent us?" Tian Yu Zi then pointed to Xuan Luo, "This is the disciple I directly taught. Tell him the competition rules. I don't care, the battle that is happening three days from now, even if you are risking your life, you better help me win! If not, you guys know what is coming!"

All the disciples revealed their forced smiles and anxious expressions. Tian Yu Zi was furious. "Don't give me that kind of face. We have already lost for so many years. We have to win at least once! This boy is yours!"

Then, with a blink of an eye, Tian Yu Zi disappeared.

"Oh God, help us!" The moment Tian Yu Zi left, Zi Yang Palace was no longer quiet. Cries could be heard everywhere.

"What's going on?" Xuan Luo asked Xuan Yuan Duan Ai.

"Haha. You shall find out!" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai clearly did not want to say anything else. He forced a smile and went inside the building.

As for the disciples that were still outside, all of them had a stiff smile on their face. Their pain cannot be expressed through words.

## Chapter 23 Zhen Fa for Three

With thick skin, Xuan Luo followed Xuan Yuan Duan Ai into the building. This task Tian Yu Zi has given him is no easy task. He honestly doesn't know how he should react. He still needs to find out the rules and details from Xuan Yuan Duan Ai.

"Duan Ai xiong, what are the rules of the competition?"

"Tian Yu Zi zhang lao wants you to compete in the competition?" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai curiously questioned.

"Is there something wrong with that?" Xuan Luo doesn't know how he should respond.

"Ha. I'm just surprised Tian Yu Zi asked you. You do know the situation at Chun Yang Palace, right? Those who are able to get into Chun Yang Palace can all cultivate nei li. There are three books of xin fa in Wu Dang. Usually, when someone first tries to enter the Clan, he/she is given the simplest book to try. The next two books, however, are much more advanced. Since Chun Yang Palace focuses on nei gong, all their disciples basically practice the best xin fa. As a result, their disciples are generally much stronger than us."

"At the same time, we are not that bad. When it comes to style, you cannot learn much from Chun Yang Palace. However, their highly perfected nei li is not something we can compare with. Although Tian Yu



Zi said it doesn't matter how strong your nei li is if your style isn't proficient, the reality is, Chun Yang Palace is much more capable than us. That is the reason why we at Zi Yang Palace have thoroughly lost confidence. I honestly don't know why Tian Yu Zi choose to send you here."

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai felt a bit useless. If his natural abilities were better, he definitely would not have joined Zi Yang Palace. Sadly, his natural abilities were limited. When he first entered the Clan, he was only able to unleash nei li using the simplest book. Yet, the quality was very poor. He wasn't able to advanced into the higher books. As a result, he decided to put his emphasis on his style instead.

"I see. But throughout all these years, Zi Yang Palace never had someone who could take on Chun Yang Palace?" Xuan Luo frowned. He didn't realize that the task Tian Yu Zi had given him was such a heavy one. Although he has some confidence in his abilities, the Tai Chi fist alone doesn't seem to be enough either.

"Tian Yu Zi zhang lao didn't tell you?" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was shocked. Xuan Luo was taught directly by Tian Yu Zi, but he doesn't seem to know anything about Tian Yu Zi's past.

"Tell me what?"

"Based on your expression, I can tell you have no idea." Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's face remained cold and uninviting. "Tian Yu Zi zhang lao could originally cultivate nei li. At the time, he practiced Zi Yang Gong, which is the highest form of Wu Dang's nei gong xin fa. But one day, during a battle, his core was destroyed. Since then, he can no longer practice nei li. Fortunately, Tian Yu Zi zhang lao's perception is deep. After closing

himself off for a long period of time, he practiced the style once more and came up with his theory that style is superior to nei gong. Hence, Zi Yang Palace and Chun Yang Palace were born. We do not know the details behind the scenes. I accidentally heard about this while practicing with a bunch of the other disciples. As for whether it is true or false, that is hard to say."

Xuan Luo was stunned. He didn't know anything about Tian Yu Zi's past.

"What happened after that?"

"Afterwards, Tian Yu Zi focused on style and many disciples with poor natural abilities had hope. Because based on his theory, once you have achieved 'success' for style, that's when it is possible to counter someone who has mastered nei li. Thus, many disciples with poor natural abilities turned to Zi Yang Palace. But practicing style is rather difficult. There are very few who can truly do it. As time passed by, everyone's confidence is shaken; and not many are willing to practice anymore. Hence, that's why we are the way we are now. Although we have a battle with Chun Yang Palace every three years, the result is always...."

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai no longer wanted to continue. But Xuan Luo could tell what he wanted to say.

"Duan Ai xiong, what is the battle going to be like?" Xuan Luo asked. Since he is already here, he wants to be prepared. After hearing Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's explanation, Xuan Luo felt pumped up. Although he doesn't know whether he can help Zi Yang Palace win, he still wanted to do his best.

"There are two parts to the competition. We have a team battle and a single battle. For the team battle, it is mandatory for us to learn a type of zhen fa to battle together. As for the one on one, each Palace sends out three representatives. The winner stays on until he himself is defeated."

"What is a zhen fa?" Xuan Luo has never heard of the term before.

"In a team battle, zhen fa is very useful. Under a zhen fa, even if your powers are not very strong, it will still increase your fighting strength tremendously."

"Three people? There's me and you. Who is the third person? In addition, I have never learnt zhen fa before. What are we going to do?" Xuan Luo creased his brows.

"There are many types of zhen fas. There is one for two people, three people, four people, five people, and so on. Learning it is not difficult; especially the two and three people one. It only takes a few days to learn it. We have three days. That is enough. But we need to be able to work together, or else the zhen fa will be useless. As for the candidates, you can see for yourself. Our disciples at Zi Yang Palace are in no shape to battle. We definitely need another person. But I actually know a person who is suitable. He might not be willing to join us though." Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was very hesitant.

"Who is he?" Xuan Luo was puzzled.

"We shall go find him. He is extremely stubborn though. But right now, the most important thing is for you to learn the zhen fa for three people." Xuan Yuan Duan Ai then threw a book at Xuan Luo. Xuan Luo looks down

and sees “Zhen Fa for Three” imprinted on the cover.

## Chapter 24 Tang Chen

The “Zhen fa for three” combines the Heaven, the Earth, and the Man. During the zhen fa, it requires the Martial artists to be extremely compatible with one another; that is the only way if the goal is to attack and defend. However, once someone can see through the zhen fa, it will be destroyed automatically.

There are many zhen fa in jiang hu. The “Zhen fa for three” is one of the most basics of its kind, although it does have certain requirements. Since Zi Yang Palace focuses on style, “Zhen fa for three” is the best zhen fa because it can substantially increase the power of the attack. The movements of the Heaven, Earth, and the Man constantly changes; which makes it difficult for people to see and break through.

Xuan Luo was smitten by the zhen fa in his hands. He had never truly understood the concept of zhen fa until now. Seeing the zhen fa in front of him, he finally has the opportunity to understand the deep meaning within it.

Within a few hours, Xuan Luo felt as if he had achieved a speedy enlightenment. It was unfortunate that only Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was around. If not, he would have wanted to try and experience the mighty power of the “Zhen fa for three”.

“Duan Ai xiong, this zhen fa is so fascinating! In such a short time, I’m already able to feel and somewhat experience the mightiness of it. With this zhen fa and our combined team effort, we will definitely have an

advantage!" Xuan Luo laughed; his face carried his confidence.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's smile wavered, "This zhen fa may seem relatively simple, but in order for it to work, all three people must be able to use it. In addition, Chun Yang Palace has this zhen fa as well. We are...aiii!"

"I see!" Although Xuan Yuan Duan Ai tried to lower his hope, Xuan Luo was still anticipating the battle. No matter what, he must help Zi Yang Palace earn back some face; even if it means he must give it his all (\*Face is a very important concept in Asia).

"Come on, let me bring you to the other guy!"

Behind Zi Yang Palace lied a forest. Many diligent disciples would come here to practice their gong fa and nei li. Regardless of location, the spiritual air is the strongest within the mountains. That is the reason why most jiang hu people choose a forest on a mountain to disappear to when they decide that they no longer wanted to meddle with the world's affairs.

"Tang Chen shi xiong, are you here?" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai shouted into a cave; an echo could be heard.

Xuan Luo was extremely curious as he stared at the cave. Immediately, a radiant laughter could be heard, "Haha, Xuan Yuan, it's you!"

No one has appeared yet, but the voice arrived first. Xuan Luo gawked at the entrance. Gradually, out came a figure.

The man was unattractive, but his eyes were bright and alert. He seemed likeable and kind.

"Tang Chen shi xiong, I came here to ask you in regards to..." However, before Xuan Yuan Duan Ai could finish, Tang Chen cuts him off.

"I already said, if it's about the battle between Zi Yang Palace and Chun Yang Palace, drop it!" Tang Chen could tell Xuan Yuan Duan Ai wanted to convince him to join the competition again, and he was furious.

*cough cough* Xuan Yuan Duan Ai held back his words.

"This da ge, this battle will affect Zi Yang Palace's reputation! As disciples of Zi Yang Palace, we need to protect it!" Xuan Yuan beamed as he looked at Tang Chen. However, Tang Chen's anger had not diminished. Hearing Xuan Luo's words, he glared at him.

"What do you know? Don't talk shit when you don't know anything!"

"As Wu Dang's disciples, we should have a common enemy. But right now, it's as if we are having a cold war amongst each other. Although I don't know exactly what has happened to cause you to be like this, but it is clear how Chun Yang Palace is behaving. They are arrogant. They cannot be like this forever. Just because Zi Yang Palace is in a bad state right now, it doesn't necessarily mean we will remain like this in the future. Tian Yu Zi is my Master, and no matter what, I will guard Zi Yang Palace to the best of my abilities. I don't care about the outcome; as long as I try my best, it's enough!" Xuan Luo declared righteously. The power of his tone was comparable to Tang Chen's.

Tang Chen stared icily at Xuan Luo. It looks like he is carefully analyzing. His face shows he is in deep thought as he looked at Xuan Yuan Duan Ai.

"Tang Chen shi xiong, Tian Yu Zi directly taught him and brought him to us." Xuan Yuan Duan Ai hurriedly stated, before things could escalate.

"Tian Yu Zi's direct disciple, eh?" Tang Chen muttered as he gently rubbed his chin.

"Haha. Come here. Are you here to negotiate?" Tang Chen's anger had turned into amusement.

"Yes. Duan Ai xiong said three of us need to work together as a team to represent Zi Yang Palace in the battle." Xuan Luo paused, "Currently, the disciples in Zi Yang Palace have lost their fire. How many are actually still trying? Chun Yang Palace have killed our atmosphere. This is our chance! Even if we cannot turn the tables around, at least we can bring back some confidence. That should be our goal. Personally, I do believe Master Tian Yu Zi's theory is correct. It's just that before we can prove his theory, it requires one to put in tremendous effort. If we haven't seen results yet, it's because we haven't worked hard enough!"

Xuan Luo doesn't know where his confidence came from, but he spoke with conviction. Hearing this, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen frowned; the boy spoke the truth.

"What? Have you achieved 'success'?" Tang Chen joked.

"I haven't yet, but I'm not too far off!" Under Tian Yu Zi's strict



expectations, Xuan Luo's Tai Chi fist has already reached the border of 'success'. He only needs a bit more opportunity to break through the layer.

"Humpt! You're not afraid your tongue will fall off by stating such a lie? If that is the case, then show me what you got! If you can beat me, I will join you guys and compete in the competition!"

Tang Chen lifted his fist and headed for an attack.

"Tang Chen shi xiong!" Seeing this unravel, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai shouted as he is nervous.

Since Xuan Luo battled Tian Yu Zi daily, he is prepared. Seeing Tang Chen about to attack, he wasn't worried. He could tell Tang Chen was still going easy on him.

"Da ge, if you're not going to use all your strength, then there's no point!" Xuan Luo grinned.

Tang Chen softly grunted as he increased the strength in his hands.

## Chapter 25 Comparing skills

Seeing Tang Chen about to strike, Xuan Luo couldn't help but feel slightly anxious. He could tell, based on Tang Chen's fists that he was either at 'success' or close to it; just like himself.

Tang Chen's quan fa was not like his Tai Chi fist. The yin and yang of the Tai Chi fist makes it seem like it has no strength, but really, it borrows other people's strengths. Whereas, Tang Chen's fists has an immediate threat and power to it. Xuan Luo was extremely startled.

Subconsciously, Xuan Luo's heart sighed. If Zi Yang Palace has someone like Tang Chen, how did they become like this?

But now was not the time to think. Tang Chen's fierce attack was going to touch him at any second.

Suddenly, Xuan Luo used his ba gua steps and his body became like a mudfish; he easily slipped past and avoided Tang Chen's attack.

His action impressed Tang Chen. Tang Chen smirked and changed his style position and headed for Xuan Luo once again.

Fists require you to get close to your opponent. It also requires you to coordinate with your steps in order to have the best outcome. Before figuring out his own steps, Xuan Luo probably wouldn't have been able

to avoid the attack. However, currently, he can easily use his steps to avoid getting hit.

Tian Yu Zi had always emphasized the importance of steps. Yet, he personally didn't teach Xuan Luo any. Instead, teaching Xuan Luo the Tai Chi fist was his priority. The reason being is that, when it comes to steps, anything taught to you is never as good as anything you can figure out on your own. Personally, Xuan Luo had forgotten about learning about steps. However, his talent is gifted. It turned out whenever he was bored, his mind would automatically think of the Tai Chi fist style; how he should step out, pull back, and make his move. Slowly, he figured out his steps on his own.

As for Tang Chen's steps, it doesn't seem at all related to his fists. However, it was still quite advanced. Evidently, his steps were taught to him. As he was using it, Xuan Luo could see a lot of flaws in between (like he could break through it).

"Right now is the time!" Xuan Luo silently thought to himself. All of a sudden, he no longer avoided; but instead, turned to faced Tang Chen's fist.

Without hesitation, he hooked his wrist with Tang Chen's wrist.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai felt a sense of dread as he watched from the side. He knew that the main purpose of Tang Chen's fist was to get close enough to strike the opponent. Once he gets close enough, the opponent is screwed. Therefore, seeing Xuan Luo willingly allowing himself to get struck, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai thinks he is asking to get slaughtered.

But as Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was worrying on the side, the image in his mind did not occur. Instead, he sees Xuan Luo using his hands to push, and Tang Chen's stance looked unstable.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was surprised. Xuan Luo looked like he didn't use much strength, yet he was able to push Tang Chen back. He couldn't believe it.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's style was taught by Tian Yu Zi. But most of the time, Tian Yu Zi asked others to work and does nothing himself. So when it came to questions, he usually had to figure things out on his own. Since Tang Chen had an unique understanding of the style, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai usually goes to him for help.

Tang Chen's face expression didn't look good. He felt like no matter what he did, he couldn't use his powers. Each time he wanted to use his strength, Xuan Luo would shift his wrist, and easily spread apart his powers. Most importantly, it looked like Xuan Luo didn't use any strength; yet he was able to push him back.

Xuan Luo started moving faster and faster. Right now, he totally forgot he was comparing skills with Tang Chen. He was totally immersed in his practicing state.

*Bang*

Xuan Luo pulled back his fists. He created a big separation between him and Tang Chen. It was clear that he had won. Xuan Luo suddenly snapped back to reality and an astonished expression appeared on Tang Chen's face.

"Thank you for letting me win, da ge!" said Xuan Luo humbly.

Tang Chen loudly laughed, "You don't have to be humble. You beat me fair and square. Looks like I haven't practiced hard enough!"

"Haha!" Xuan Luo couldn't hold back his grin. When someone praise him, he shall accept.

"Then, about the competition?" He asked.

Tang Chen sighed. "This competition is not as simple as you think. We focus on style, which can also be a disadvantage. But seeing your abilities, I am definitely a frog at the bottom of the well (idiom, meaning his view of the world is limited). Are you aware of Chun Yang Palace's current situation?"

Xuan Luo wasn't sure. "Da ge. Please, explain!"

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai looked at Tang Chen and instantly elaborated. "Haha, Xuan Luo. Basically, in Chun Yang Palace, the majority of their people are able to outer project their nei li. For us, since we focus on style, we have to get close enough in order cause any real damage. The problem is, how can we get close enough?"

If a person is able to outer project his nei li, it means that his nei li has reached a certain level. This makes it more difficult for those who study style. If you cannot touch your opponent, then your skills are useless.

"Oh I see!" Xuan Luo nodded. He does have a little understanding of nei li's outer projection. After all, he could cultivate nei li, and he has practiced nei gong xin fa. For some reason, although the ragged book doesn't have a name, he was confident that his xin fa is not inferior to Wu Dang's.

"Can't we think of a way to break through?" Xuan Luo questioned.

"Right now, we have no solution. When we are in a battle, both sides are releasing energy. Their energy can harm us. If we cannot get close enough to harm them, then we are already defeated." Tang Chen sadly shook his head.

Actually, in terms of potential, Tang Chen definitely holds the number one spot in Zi Yang Palace. Before Xuan Luo's arrival, he had participated in every competition. However, each time he was always defeated; and he was doomed to be defeated from the start. Although he had some confidence in Tian Yu Zi's theory, after being defeated again and again, his faith has wavered. Hence, he no longer wanted to meddle with Zi Yang Palace's affairs. Instead, he went to the back of the mountain and isolated himself to practice on his own.

"Ai, da ge. This time, Zi Yang Palace is going to win this competition!" Xuan Luo stated with determination. His eyes shone with boldness.

Seeing how strong willed Xuan Luo was, Tang Chen could feel his inner soul coming alive again. He smiled and said, "Yes, this time we will win!"

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai doesn't know what to say, but his inner soul was coming alive again as well. At this moment, all three of them looked at

one another, each showing their will to win.

"Yes. We must win in the individual competition as well as the team competition!" Then, Tang Chen suddenly recalled, "Oh, Xuan Luo. Have you practiced the zhen fa yet?"

"Yes. I have learnt the 'zhen fa for three' " Xuan Luo nodded.

"Good. We'll start practicing now. We don't have much time left, so we must make use of what we have left. We have to combine the zhen fa, or else it will not be able to work."

"Ha!" All three of them called out together. Then, they stood in their position.

Heaven, Earth, and the Man (I know, it sounds so weird when I translate it..-\_-). Each of them holds a position and beings to practice.

For every time they rotate and attack, their bonding connection became better and better. Soon, the moon was hanging in the night sky.

Xuan Luo and Tang Chen both lied on the grass with their hands behind their heads. As they looked up the starry sky, the smiles on their faces were bright as well.

Night time. It was calm. The calming feeling causes one to feel at peace. Whenever Xuan Luo had time, he would look up the great big sky. The sky of the Wu Dang mountain was amazing. It was so good that Xuan Luo didn't know how to describe it. The feeling just felt awesome. His

mood was fabulous....the sky was so pure. Even if a cloud tries to block the stars, within a few minutes, the wind will scatter it.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai lied on the grass as well, "Haha. I have a bit more confidence in the competition this time!"

"Yes. This time, Zi Yang Palace might actually win!" Tang Chen agreed.

"No, Tang xiong, Xuan Yuan xiong. This time, we will win!" Xuan Luo yelled. He pulled out his two hands from under his head and lied like a 大 (the shape of the Chinese character).

Tang Chen and Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's smiles were awkward as they both said in unison, "You are way too confident!"

"Having confidence is good! No matter what, for this competition, we will show Chun Yang Palace what we at Zi Yang Palace are capable of!" Xuan Luo shouted.

At that moment, Tang Chen and Xuan Yuan Duan Ai both smacked Xuan Luo's head.

"Ow, don't hit my head!"

"Hey! What are you trying to do!?"

"Ahh! Don't! I'm ticklish!!"



Just like this, the three of them playfully fought one another. Their feelings/emotions for each other have gone up substantially. Originally, they all had a barrier against each other. But now, their hearts are linked. All three of them have the same goal; which is, Zi Yang Palace must win this competition.

## Chapter 26 To provoke

Today, the atmosphere in Zi Yang Palace was different from the usual. Everyone's attention was centralized on Tian Yu Zi.

"Xuan Yuan Duan Ai, Xuan Luo, and Tang Chen will be representing us for the competition." said Tian Yu Zi sternly as he stood in the centre of the main hall.

The disciples honestly don't have much confidence in regards to the competition. Of course, that doesn't include Xuan Luo and them. Xuan Luo believes he is prepared for the competition.

"Old man. Why are you talking so much rubbish? You're making this too serious!" Xuan Luo pouted. He said it bluntly despite the occasion.

Tian Yu Zi glowered at Xuan Luo; as if he was trying to say: Young man, give me some face! We are in a public place with numerous people.

Actually, it isn't surprising for Tian Yu Zi to act this way. Usually, Xuan Luo does not address him like how a disciple should. Instead, they call each other by their nicknames (lol is 'old man' considered a nickname? Haha).

Don't underestimate Tian Yu Zi for being a zhang lao; when he plays, he is crazier than everyone else. But when he is serious, he is able to act in a

leading position.

Clearly, Xuan Luo doesn't care about these small details. He chuckled and smiled, "Don't worry about it! It's no big deal!"

Seeing how Xuan Luo and Tian Yu Zi were acting, all the disciples stared in astonishment. Their expressions were very exaggerated, but the most exaggerated ones were Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen. They know Xuan Luo is being taught by Tian Yu Zi directly, but they didn't expect their relationship to be at this level.

*Cough cough* "This time, all three of you must extinguish Chun Yang Palace's arrogant attitude. If not, you know what to expect!" Tian Yu Zi said with obscurity. However, Xuan Luo could definitely sense the coldness in Tian Yu Zi's tone. Subconsciously, his whole body quivered with excitement.

"Okay..." Xuan Luo responded and turned towards Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen. All three of them placed their palms on top of each other. Just as they were about to separate, Tian Yu Zi placed his old wrinkly hand on top as well.

They looked at each other and loudly hollered, "Add oil!" (Add oil really means keep going. Chinese people like to say that a lot. I guess it's because you can keep going if you have oil? LOLLLL okay I will stop now)

## Ba Gua Stage

The ba gua stage is one of Wu Dang's most unique features. As a result,

most competitions or practicing take place here.

In addition, the ba gua stage is very close to Tai He Dian. Those who make decisions for the Clan only need to stand from the back window, and they will be able to see everything that is happening on stage. The ba gua stage is located behind the Tai He Dian in a big public square. It can fit nearly a thousand disciples at a time. Practicing is alright, but battling, not so much. Hence, usually very few would battle on the ba gua stage.

As Xuan Luo approached the entrance that leads to the ba gua stage, he sensed some familiarity. He quickly asked, "Duan Ai xiong, we're not battling here, are we?"

"Yes, why?" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai turned around and looked at Xuan Luo in confusion.

"Nothing..." Xuan Luo muttered.

Actually, there was a reason why Xuan Luo asked. He is aware of the conflicting views amongst the two groups. Therefore, he knows that Chun Yang Palace is going to think of ways to take their people away from them. This competition is one of their methods. Originally, Zhang Men would have taken him in if he could demonstrate nei li; Tian Yu Zi just got lucky.

This is actually the main reason why Tang Chen didn't want to participate in the competition. However, since he wasn't close to Xuan Luo, he only said they were at a disadvantaged; instead of revealing his true thoughts.

Since Zi Yang Palace focuses on style, their nei li is quite weak (or nonexistent) in most cases. But that hasn't stopped Chun Yang Palace from coming to Zi Yang Palace to recruit and steal people. Anyone who has the slightest abilities would be convinced to follow them instead. Yet, after they leave Zi Yang Palace, these disciples are treated terribly and given dirty tasks. Thus, Tang Chen hates Chun Yang Palace with a passion.

A long time ago, they had tried to recruit Tang Chen, but he rejected them. He'd rather stay in Zi Yang Palace happily than to be treated like a dog in Chun Yang Palace.

Sadly, each competition ended in defeat. Chun Yang Palace looked down on them and said very hurtful things. He wanted to fight back, but the Clan rule was clear: "Being a person is more important than his skill". And it's true. Hence, Tang Chen started closing himself off to everyone. It wasn't until he reached 'success' that he realized that Tian Yu Zi's theory was possible. Thus, he participated in the competition once again. But the people of Chun Yang Palace are despicable. They never allow him to get close. Hence, all his hard work went in vain. (Well, duh. Why would they let you get close if they want to win? That's just stupid. lol)

"Oh, isn't it Duan Ai? What? You want to get beaten up again so soon?" Xuan Luo heard a voice sneered behind him.

A bunch of people around them started snickering. Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's eyes darkened.

"You..." Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was clearly agitated, but he held back.

"Haha. Zi Yang Palace should have been long disbanded. You might as well just join us at Chun Yang Palace. Maybe we'll give you a role! Haha!"

Xuan Luo had enough. He was trying to repress himself, but hearing those words, he was furious. He turned to the man, "Two years ago, I remember I saw a man who was beaten by Duan Ai xiong. Wasn't it you, Wu Di? Don't think just because your name is Wu Di, you are wu di!? (Wu di can also mean invincible in Chinese if you change the intonation).

"You..." Wu Di shrieked as he pointed to Xuan Luo.

"Don't be in such a hurry. I will put you in your place later. I honestly don't get it. Why are some people such assholes? Are they born like that?" Xuan Luo mocked. At first, he wanted to bite his tongue, but Wu Di was just too much.

The competition hasn't even began, but the atmosphere already smelt of gunpowder. At that moment, an old man walked out. His face looked like a red radiant light, and his hair looked like it has been wiped with oil.

"Doll, your teeth and mouth are as sharp as weapons, eh? We'll see how you do later. Xiao Di, why are you wasting your time with these people? Let's go!" This old man's voice was sharp and highly pitched.

"You old feet man, our business is none of your business! You should take a look at your disciples. They have terrible conducts and morals. At least, our people from Zi Yang Palace are of much better characters than your people from Chun Yang Palace. And your mouth is like smelly feet!" Tian Yu Zi was behind them and oversaw everything. The rage on his face remained as he yelled at Wu Ya Zi, who was in front of him.

“Humpt! We’ll see who wins! Humpt! Let’s go!” It looked as if Wu Ya Zi felt slightly guilty towards Tian Yu Zi. When he looked at Tian Yu Zi, he didn’t do anything but ordered the rest of his disciples to head towards the ba gua stage.

“I am going to die from anger! Die from anger! I cannot tolerate their bullying!” Tian Yu Zi has never exploded like lightning before. Right now, he is about to shoot off.

## Chapter 27 Single Elimination Open Tournament: Round One

"Old man..." Xuan Luo quietly murmured. Seeing Tian Yu Zi act like this, Xuan Luo felt an emotion he could not explain. Perhaps it was because they had spent two years day and night; his attachment towards Tian Yu Zi has deepen. Aside from Guan Shan Jue, Tian Yu Zi is the other person in his heart.

"You little monkey! If you don't kick their ass, I'm not going to be done with you! I'm going to die from anger!" Originally, Xuan Luo wanted to comfort Tian Yu Zi; but his words shocked him. He was lying down and he still got shot? (He wasn't actually shot. He just meant Tian Yu Zi was angry at him even though he didn't do anything) What the heck.

It's not surprising that Tian Yu Zi is so angry. He's fed up with Chun Yang Palace's bullying.

"Forget it. Let's go. This time, no matter what, we have to get Zi Yang Palace's face back!" (The concept of face mainly has to do with pride). Xuan Yuan Duan Ai consoled on the side.

"Yes!" Xuan Luo and Tang Chen both agreed. Regardless, they must win back their face! (LOL this sounds so funny when I translate it! Aahahaah)

There were already many disciples waiting underneath the ba gua stage. After all, this competition only takes place every three years. Although the end result had always been the same, it was still a hot topic amongst the disciples.



The zhang lao in charge of the event stood on the stage and announced the start of the competition. Although his voice was timid, everyone heard him.

“The competition between Chun Yang Palace and Zi Yang Palace is officially starting. In regards to the rules, you all know by now. Since we are under the same Clan, we are not battling to slaughter each other. You only have to touch your opponent. If any issues arise, I will personally come on stage to end your battle. Remember, no harming your opponent!” The zhang lao in charge then lightly leaped and flew from the stage onto another viewing platform.

On that platform stood Zhang Men, Tian Yu Zi, Wu Ya Zi, and the zhang lao in charge. From their spot, they were able to oversee everything.

“How do we enter the stage?” Xuan Luo was confused. This is his first time competing. Although Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen had told him the rules before, currently he is still clueless.

“In the elimination battle, you want to preserve your spot. Whoever that gets kicked off stage or loses will have to get off. The winner will continue to stay on the stage as he waits for his next opponent. Since both sides can only send out three disciples, the three participating in the elimination battle will definitely be participating in the group battle as a trio as well.” Tang Chen explained.

At that moment, Wu Di leaped up from the bottom of the stage onto the ba gua stage. As he looked down at Xuan Luo and them, he turned to his shi xiong and laughed, “Shi xiong, I will cover the first round. You

probably don't even need to come on stage!"

Wu Di was extremely confident. He looked at Xuan Luo's direction and jeered. "Haha. You guys won't be able to handle one of me!"

Since Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Wu Di pretty much hates each other's guts, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was immediately provoked and totally enraged. He did not discuss with Xuan Luo and Tang Chen, and directly leaped onto the stage. "I have defeated you once. And I can defeat you infinite times!"

"Oh, is that so?" Wu Di sneered. "If I weren't so careless last time, you wouldn't have won. Today is no longer the past. This time, I shall return the shame that you have brought onto me. Haaaa!"

Wu Di pulled out the sword from behind him and headed straight for Xuan Yuan Duan Ai.

At that split second, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai moved. Actually, in Zi Yang Palace, very few people have practiced the sword. Xuan Yuan Duan Ai is one of the few. According to Tian Yu Zi's theory, if one were to practice the sword, he/she must be able to release the ultimate strength within it. Fists was mandatory because fists is part of the body. If one cannot master his/her own body, then he/she will definitely be unable to release the ultimate strength of a sword (something that is the extension of the body).

But Xuan Yuan Duan Ai felt differently. He didn't have that much time to practice the fists. He firmly decided to practice the sword. And this jian fa is from Tian Yu Zi. Originally, Tian Yu Zi wasn't willing to teach it to him.

However, his abnormally determined expression touched Tian Yu Zi's heart. Hence, Tian Yu Zi passed on the teachings to him.

The jian fa he is using is Wu Dang's Heaven and Earth jian fa. This jian fa uses the sequence of movement to attack and defend. But Xuan Yuan Duan Ai used his own talents and figured out how to change this jian fa from a one sword attack to a double sword attack.

Anyhow, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai quickly drew out his sword as Wu Di drew his.

### *Clashing sound*

When the two swords collided against each other, a metal collision sound could be heard echoing through the stage.

Both of them were swift and quick. Within a few minutes, they had already fought a couple of rounds.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai couldn't help but frown as he fought with Wu Di. Wu Di's strength has increased dramatically since they last fought. Xuan Yuan Duan Ai can feel his stress increasing. Despite that, he is unwilling to give up. As he is blocking Wu Di's attacks, he is also looking for any breakthroughs (holes/errors he could cut through his attack).

For the past two years, Wu Di was strikingly diligent. He spent most of his time practicing nei li. The Wu Di today is totally different from the Wu Di two years ago. His strength has increased substantially; as well as his confidence. The defeat and shame he had experienced from losing to

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai remained deeply hidden within his heart. Thus, whenever he had time, he would go and cause trouble at Zi Yang Palace.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai usually do not allow Wu Di to provoke him. He could tell that Wu Di's strength has increased a lot. Once, Wu Di came to start shit and he decided to fight him. At that time, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai already felt the stress. Although he had won, it was a very difficult win. Hence, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai often goes behind the mountain to look for Tang Chen to discuss how he could improve his skills. For a period of time, he didn't even deal with any of Zi Yang Palace's issues.

Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi basically do not care what their disciples do to each other as long as they do not openly break any Clan rules. In the past, the conflict between the two groups were not as obvious. However, in the past year, problems have been ongoing; causing things to be the way they are now.

Although Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's strength has also increased, right now, it was evident that Wu Di was overpowering him.

When battling, the goal is to counter every strike. Chun Yang Palace focuses on nei li, therefore, their style are definitely not as good as Zi Yang Palace. However, they are able to use nei li to compensate that. Within a short amount of time, they are able to upgrade their style. But at the same time, their flaws are much more obvious.

Seeing how he could not attack, Wu Di started to become slightly anxious. He quickly turned to his xin fa and added it onto the sword. Slowly, Wu Di's sword emitted a faint mist. It was faint, but it still existed.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai sees this and knows he is in trouble. Wu Di is trying to end the battle early. Earlier, he was able to see there were many flaws in Wu Di's attacks. He kept looking for an opportunity, but hasn't succeeded yet.

Both of them stood on stage with their swords extended straight at each other. The fire within their eyes were evident. When it came to posture and attitude, neither of them were weaker than the other.

With nei li on his side, Wu Di slyly grinned. His smile made him look a bit like an evil villain. Suddenly, his feet moved as he thrust his sword at Xuan Yuan Duan Ai.

The more rushed a person is, the more obvious their mistakes are. Seeing Wu Di's move, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai smiled. He thrust out his sword as well to meet Wu Di's.

Once again, the two sword struck against each other. But this time, no sounds could be heard.

Tang Chen made an analysis. He lightly whispered, "Xuan Yuan doesn't have much advantage this round. The nei li added onto the sword is extraordinary. We can't even heard the sounds."

Xuan Luo was confused, and quickly asked, "How can no sounds be heard if two swords meet?"

"The nei li is wrapped around Wu Di's sword. To some degree, it dissolves the strength of Xuan Yuan's sword. He wants to lower the risk of

getting hurt.” Actually, that’s only one of the ways to use nei li. After a certain level, the nei li can be outer projected. But it seems like Wu Di did not take advantage of this.

As the two swords contacted, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai could feel Wu Di overpowering him. He quickly tries to save himself by increasing the strength of his hand and avoiding to get close to Wu Di.

At that instant, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai found an opportunity and the single sword he was using turned into two. With two swords, he returned the strikes.

“Xuan Yuan is using his killer move, we are going to win!” Tang Chen smiled with satisfaction as Xuan Yuan Duan Ai’s single sword became double swords.

Xuan Luo was in shock. All along Duan Ai xiong was actually using two swords!

Wu Di was caught off guard. He didn’t expect Xuan Yuan Duan Ai to be using two swords. At that moment, he didn’t know what to do.

On the other hand, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai’s demeanour totally changed. It’s as if all his inner potential is being released. Originally, the double sword is his killer move. Thus, he must and cannot lose. Once a person’s inner fire has been stirred, there is no turning back.

At that moment, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai’s double swords striked and flung Wu Di’s sword off his hands.

Immediately, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai took the opportunity and combined his two swords into one again, and landed it right next to Wu Di's neck.

"Woah! Duan Ai xiong won!" screamed Xuan Luo. He was so thrilled, he jumped up.

Seeing this, all the disciples from Zi Yang Palace went crazy. Remember, they had always been pushed down by Chun Yang Palace. Back then, they didn't even dare to breathe.

"I....I lost..." Wu Di didn't know how he lost. His knees weakened and he landed on them in defeat. He couldn't focus. He couldn't believe the outcome. But seeing the light beam next to his neck, cold sweats ran down....

## Chapter 28 Zhan Feng Hua

“Wu Di shi di actually lost. Wow, I guess Zi Yang Palace has more potential than I thought!” A man looked at Xuan Yuan Duan Ai with admiration.

That man is Zhan Feng Hua. He is one of the top disciples from Chun Yang Palace. He practiced Wu Dang’s second best nei gong xin fa, liang yi gong.

Wu Dang has a total of three sets of nei gong xin fa. The most basic one is hu xin gong, then liang yi gong comes in second, and lastly, the best is chun yang wu ji gong. Those who practice the chun yang wu ji gong will directly become Zhang Men’s disciples. Those under Zhang Men are all well known figures. An example would be Zhang Ri; he definitely represents as one of Zhang Men’s greatest disciples.

Zhan Feng Hua could have originally practiced Wu Dang’s best xin fa. However, he had already practiced liang yi gong for a long period of time. As a result, he did not want to give up everything he had and start over. Thus, although he has the talent to go beyond, he chose to continue practicing liang yi gong and remained within Chun Yang Palace.

Many disciples couldn’t understand why Zhan Feng Hua would give up such a great opportunity, but he laughed it off.

Since Xuan Yuan Duan Ai won, Xuan Luo was extremely emotional.



Although this was only the first round, it was an awesome start; perhaps a good start will lead to a good ending. Currently, all the disciples from Zi Yang Palace are looking at Xuan Yuan Duan Ai like he is a God.

"Xuan Yuan shi xiong is unbelievable! He can even beat the people from Chun Yang Palace. Amazing! I must practice and work harder on my style!" A disciple exclaimed.

"Ha. Wu Di shi xiong wasn't at his best, that's all! You guys from Zi Yang Palace will always be below us!" Another disciple instantly refuted.

"Hummp!"

-----

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai stood on the stage and looked coldly at Wu Di. "You may get off now."

Wu Di did not want to accept his defeat. He looked at Xuan Yuan Duan Ai, his eyes filled with hatred.

"Wu Di shi di, get off! I'll take your place!" Zhan Feng Hua leaped onto the stage.

Wu Dang's gong fa is not better than the sword spells, fist spells, and palm spells. It's just that their nei li is pure energy. That's mainly the reason why most would agree Chun Yang Palace is more powerful than Zi Yang Palace.

"You are no match for me." Zhan Feng Hua pointed at Xuan Yuan Duan Ai. He looked at Xuan Yuan Duan Ai with disdain. Basically, everyone from Chun Yang Palace looked down at people from Zi Yang Palace.

"Haha. No match for you? We'll see about that. Wasn't Wu Di a good example?" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai callously laughed.

"Well then, let me show you what I'm capable of!" Zhan Feng Hua didn't want to waste any more time. He took out his sword and immediately powered up with nei li.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai frowned. Under these circumstances, how could he give up? After the single elimination battle, they still have the group battle; no matter what, he should at least use up some of his opponent's powers so he can help increase his teammates' chances later on.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai split his single sword into two swords once again. Since he had already shown off the ability earlier, he no longer has a reason to hide it.

The double sword is his killer move. Since it's his "killer move", he has to use it to show off his true potential.

Zhan Feng Hua was definitely ready. But he knows, in a single elimination battle, he should use his powers very sparingly; or else he would not be able to take on the next opponent.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai knows Chun Yang Palace relies on their nei li.

Without it, they are nothing. If his opponent uses up most of his nei li, it will take awhile for him to be able to restore his powers again.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's double sword clashes against Zhan Feng Hua's single sword.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's movements were skillful. His two swords were like an extension of his arms; they moved like two slippery snakes. As he fought against Zhan Feng Hua, his heart had two purposes (I guess, multitasking? One heart two purpose).

Seeing this, Zhan Feng Hua solemnly yelled out, "Tiny beads of pearl, express your brilliance!" (It's a spell. In Wuxia, they usually yell out their spells to activate it. If you're confused, imagine Harry Potter lol).

Zhan Feng Hua's sword broke away from his hand and flew towards Xuan Yuan Duan Ai.

For inexperienced disciples, they might have thought Zhan Feng Hua lost control of his sword, but Xuan Yuan Duan Ai knows he is in trouble. The sword speedily headed towards him, making it nearly impossible to track its motion.

A clang sound could be heard. Xuan Yuan Duan Ai used his double sword to block the hit like a cross 十. But the force of the sword was way too intense, and with the nei li involved, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai couldn't hold his stance. He was being pushed back by many steps. Right now, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai is at the edge of the stage.

At that moment, Zhan Feng Hua moved. He used his body spell and accelerated on Xuan Yuan Duan Ai.

Zhan Feng Hua raised his right hand and his sword hovered in the air. Then he flipped the sword backwards, and the handle of the sword pushed against Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's chest.

Just like that, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was pushed off the stage.

Everything happened so quickly.

Then, Zhan Feng Hua's sword flew back into its rightful place (behind his back).

*Cough cough* Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was off the stage, coughing out blood.

"Duan Ai xiong!" Xuan Luo was very concerned. Spitting blood cannot be a good sign; at least, not in his opinion.

Tang Chen quickly went to hold onto Xuan Yuan Duan Ai. "Are you alright?"

"Tang shi xiong, I tried my best..." Xuan Yuan Duan Ai felt bad as he looked at Tang Chen.

"Don't worry about it! You have already used your killer move. Let me handle the rest!" Tang Chen consoled.

Tang Chen leaped onto the stage. But facing Zhan Feng Hua, could Tang Chen really win with his fists?

Xuan Luo tries to help Xuan Yuan Duan Ai up, and take care of him.

However, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai waved his hand, implying he is alright. He only wanted to focus on the stage.

## Chapter 29 A sudden event

Xuan Luo looked up onto the stage as well. He had fought with Tang Chen once before, so he is aware of Tang Chen's potential; aside from having some flaws in his steps, everything else is fine.

"Haha. You didn't participate last time, eh?!" Zhan Feng Hua seemed to recognized Tang Chen. (I thought he participated in every competition before Xuan Luo came...the author needs to make up his mind. -\_-)

Currently, Tang Chen is twenty five years of age. Even Zhang Ri is twenty four. This means that Tang Chen has been with Wu Dang for a very long time. Most of the disciples enter a Clan at the age of seven or eight; some even at five or six. Each Clan is located at a different area. People's choices may differ as well. However, Wu Dang is the most popular because it is closest to Du Cheng.

Other Clans are located in faraway provinces. It could take months to arrive at a Clan (which would require a lot of money). Hence, the reality is that only those who come from affluent families may choose the Clan of their choice.

"Stop with the crap and let's battle." Tang Chen coldly responded; he definitely didn't give Zhan Feng Hua any face.

Seeing Tang Chen act this way, Zhan Feng Hua felt humiliated. In Chun Yang Palace, he is one of the most respected disciples. Other disciples would do anything to please him. Therefore, how could he not be

angered right now?

Zhan Feng Hua pulled out his sword and pointed it horizontally at his opponent. As he stood on stage, everyone could feel the intensity of his demeanor.

Tang Chen did not initiate an attack. He knows he is at a disadvantage since he is using fists. An inch long, an inch strong (LOL HAAHAHAHA. WHO TALKS LIKE THAT? HAAHAHAHA. He means, the longer the inch, the more advantage the person has!). Regardless how strong a body may be, it cannot face a weapon force with force. Although, in jiang hu, there are some skilled martial artists who could use their body strength to suppress the strength of weapons.

Tang Chen closed his eyes and deeply inhaled. Since he is representing Zi Yang Palace, he is under tremendous pressure. Aside from Wu Ya Zi's constant provocation, his age also plays a factor. By his age, he should be going through jiang hu and experiencing life. However, he has never left the mountains because he wasn't able to reach 'success' yet. In addition, he stayed for Zi Yang Palace...

As a disciple of Zi Yang Palace, Tang Chen doesn't want to see Zi Yang Palace continue going on a spiraling downfall. However, a mayfly cannot shake a tree (Tang Chen is implying he is a fly compared to Chun Yang Palace, which is "the tree"). After all, he is not a God. He is only human. Plus, Chun Yang Palace's reputation is steadily expanding; while Zi Yang Palace just keeps on deteriorating. Aside from the very few disciples, they basically have nobody.

Zhan Feng Hua didn't move either. He remained standing where he was, looking at Tang Chen. They were both staring at each other.

Both of them looked at each other; with fire in their eyes.

But as they exchanged glances, Tang Chen and Zhan Feng Hua had already exchanged numerous rounds. The surprising thing was, they were using their spirits to fight.

Each person is born with a spirit. There isn't a fixed method on how to cultivate the spirit. Instead, it's an unnoticed transformation. Currently, Tang Chen and Zhang Feng Hua are using their spirits (You just said that. -\_-I want the author to stop repeating himself lol).

Xuan Luo looked at the stage, and was confused. "Duan Ai xiong, why are they not attacking each other?"

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's eyes were fixed on the stage. He solemnly whispered, "They have already started to measure up against each other. I just can't tell who is the stronger one."

When it comes to the spirits fighting, it doesn't merely test a disciple's physical strength; it also tests a disciple's mental understanding of Martial Arts. Sometimes, the battle of the spirits are more fierce than the battle of the bodies.

Xuan Luo stared intently on the stage. Suddenly, he was shocked to discover that he could see the battle scene!

He didn't know how it happened, but he could see the two fighting ferociously in the air. Tang Chen's attack was intense; his steps were fitting



too. But Zhan Feng Hua was fighting equally as well. But suddenly, Zhan Feng Hua's nei li increased rapidly; he wield his sword and produced a stream of qian qi which blasted its way towards Tang Chen.

"Tang da ge is going to lose..." Somehow, the words came out of Xuan Luo's mouth.

Xuan Yuan Duan Ai looked at Xuan Luo as if he was a strange beast. Most people cannot see the battle of the spirits; instead, they only see two people looking at one another. Yet, Xuan Luo seems to be able to see who is winning; obviously he is not normal.

Right after Xuan Luo made his prediction, Tang Chen spat out a mouthful of fresh blood; and his face turned as white as paper.

"I lost...." Tang Chen quietly accepted his defeat. He has no more strength to continue talking. He walked to the edge of the ba gua stage and hopped off.

Xuan Luo rushed to his side, "Tang da ge, please rest. It's my turn. I will try my best."

Tang Chen weakly smiled at Xuan Luo.

Zhan Feng Hua's condition is not much better than Tang Chen's. Tang Chen only lost because he wasn't able to avoid the last hit. The speed of the qian qi was too quick.

But just like that, Zhan Feng Hua's nei li is now empty.

Unlike the other contestants, Xuan Luo didn't directly leaped onto the stage. Instead, he walked to the side of the stage and went up the steps.

This stunned the audience and Tian Yu Zi couldn't help but smacked his forehead.

Wu Ya Zi smirked, "Tian Yu Zi, this is the disciple you brought up? Wow...."

"You have no right to judge my disciple!!" Tian Yu Zi roared. Tian Yu Zi's voice caught the attention of all the audience, and everyone turned towards the platform.

"What? You can't accept it? Then do something about it! I've already told you, your shitty theory doesn't work! You just won't believe me. It has already been so many years, and your strongest disciples from Zi Yang Palace is comparable to our average disciples at best. What are you going to do about it, huh?!?" Wu Ya Di definitely isn't going to allow this opportunity to slip. Rarely would he have the opportunity to make Tian Yu Zi look bad in front of all the disciples.

Xuan Luo had just gotten on stage, but he overheard everything due to their booming voices. He mumbled, "Old man..."

Xuan Luo knows the existence of Chun Yang Palace and their current potential is causing Zi Yang Palace a lot of stress; and all the stress is directly falling onto Tian Yu Zi.

Zhang Men and the Zhang Lao in charge did not try to stop the bickering. After all, they are both the elders of the Clan. In addition, they know their personalities.

“Humpt! If you got skills, then let’s battle! You smelly feet guy! I’m not done with you!” Tian Yu Zi exploded like lightning.

“Let’s battle then! I’m not afraid of you!” Wu Yai Zi’s posture was definitely not weaker than Tian Yu Zi’s. They started fighting on their platform.

Zhang Men wanted to intervene, but unexpectedly, Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi fought and flew their way onto the ba gua stage.

## Chapter 30 Ridiculous turn of event

“Hummmpt! All these years, we have never truly fought a proper match. Come! You think I’m afraid of you?!” Tian Yu Zi provoked as he pointed obnoxiously at Wu Ya Zi; he wouldn’t shut up.

The audience did not expect this scene to take place. Originally, they came to watch the competition. Now, they are just dumbstruck by what has happened. They don’t know what is going on.

However, Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi’s fight disagreement is definitely ruining their reputations. As Wu Dang’s elders, they are supposed to behave in a certain manner (respectable and serious). Yet, their current behaviour is unacceptable.

However, their actions are giving the audience a new and fresh feeling (something they have never seen or experienced before).

Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi are already on the stage; the fury has been ignited.

Don’t underestimate Tian Yu Zi’s old silly face; when he is provoked, he definitely gets to work. With a blink of an eye, he disappears on stage.

Wu Ya Zi immediately tenses up. When it comes to understanding Tian Yu Zi, he actually knows more about him than Zhang Men does. The

reason being is that in the past, something entwined them together. It was because of this issue that both of them quarreled; leading to the creation of Chun Yang Palace and Zi Yang Palace. Of course, that is something to be explained later.

Xuan Luo was astounded to see this side of Tian Yu Zi. He had never actually seen Tian Yu Zi show all his abilities. Thus, his admiration for Tian Yu Zi subconsciously went up quite a few levels.

"Impressive!" Xuan Luo praised.

In an electrifying moment, Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi had already battled dozens of rounds. As Xuan Luo watched from below the stage (how did he end up below the stage? I thought he was already on the stage. -\_- "Jeez, author. Make up your mind!"), he basically couldn't see Tian Yu Zi's figure. Very rarely would he slow down; but immediately he would disappear again.

Tian Yu Zi's speed was incredible. Compared to him, Wu Ya Zi was much slower. As a result, everyone focused their attention on Wu Ya Zi (I guess, because they could see him? haha).

Currently, Wu Ya Zi's situation is not favourable. Tian Yu Zi is indeed too fast. Within a short period, he has already been attacked by Tian Yu Zi countless of times.

At that moment, Wu Ya Zi could not hold back anymore. He loudly roared and accelerated straight ahead. Because he was too quick, only a distorted figure could be seen (I don't get how it became distorted...but anyway....).

The audience's eyes and jaws were dropping all over the place (an expression, not actually dropping lol). Xuan Luo felt a ripple through his heart. Is this the potential of a true Martial Artist? When calm, remain still like a mountain; but once the cover is off, the speed could not be seen by the naked eye.

Now, no figures could be seen on stage. But everyone knows those two are still battling on stage. It's just that they are invisible.

Perhaps people wanted a confirmation; as the audience were staring frantically at the stage, a banging explosion that shook the Heaven and Earth could be heard.

It's as if the air exploded around everyone. A shapeless hurricane blew onto the audience's faces and caused it to sting.

Then, two figures revealed themselves in midair. Both Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi's clothes were torn as they both grabbed hold of each other; neither willing to let go. They looked extremely comical and ridiculous.

"Haha! You didn't expect this, eh? Your true qi bomb didn't own me!" Tian Yu Zi teased and chuckled.

Tian Yu Zi looked pretty worn out, so it's quite difficult for others to applaud him. But in such a situation, he's still joking around and being silly. He is truly Tian Yu Zi...

"Pssh, don't be so sure of yourself! My true qi bomb hasn't been

mastered yet. When I am truly able to project all my nei li, you will be left without your skeleton!" Wu Ya Zi was agitated by Tian Yu Zi's smiling face. Hence, he had to refute.

"Hmmp! Come! Who's afraid of whoooo?" Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi are no longer making crazy moves on each other. Instead, they're fighting with physical strength (like wrestling?)

Now, it is clear that Tian Yu Zi has the advantage over Wu Ya Zi. Clearly, they have both exhausted their energy (Wu Ya Zi must have ran out of nei li). If not, what has happened earlier would have continued.

Now, Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi were acting like two children as one would punch and the other would kick. At times, they would try to squish each other.

Such an amazing fight suddenly turned out like this... what a ridiculous turn of event!

Seeing this, Zhang Men and the zhang lao in charge looked at each other and laughed. Then, the zhang lao in charge stood up and flew towards Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi. With each hand on an elder, he is trying to separate the two from fighting.

"You smelly feet guy! I'm not done with you!" Tian Yu Zi shrieked as the zhang lao in charge grabbed hold of him.

Likewise, Wu Ya Zi wouldn't back off, he shrilled, "How dare you call me smelly feet guy? I'm not done with you!"

Just like that, the two started fighting once more...

Chun Yang Palace and Zi Yang Palace has been having issues for a long time now. But no one really knows what had happened between Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi. It hasn't been revealed because both are experts in their field (As a translator, I'm confused right now...why can't it be revealed? huh)

As Xuan Luo watched Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi, his mind is going wild. Earlier, the two's conflicts were very obvious. But now, they're acting like childhood friends; fooling around.

But at that moment, seeing Tian Yu Zi so worn out, Xuan Luo felt slightly sad inside. He didn't care about Wu Ya Zi, but Tian Yu Zi causes his heart to feel something.

It seems like Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi's battle is finally coming to an end. The intense battle from earlier, however, will have a lasting impression on the disciples' heart forever.

As for Zi Yang Palace, many disciples are now more confident about Tian Yu Zi's theory (since they witnessed his speedy attacks).

Remember, Wu Ya Zi is the boss of Chun Yang Palace; his nei li is definitely way more advanced and powerful compared to the other disciples under him. Although no one truly knew what that explosion sound was, some disciples could tell it was nei li that was outer projected.



Only those who have reached a certain state can outer project their nei li. At the beginning stage, even releasing nei li at the appropriate time is tough. Outer projection of nei li is way beyond that. It takes a lot of control before it can happen...

## Chapter 31 Enemy remains still, I remain still

Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi's ridiculous battle made the competition much more entertaining. As a result, a bunch of disciples were already talking amongst themselves.

Zhang Men helplessly smiled as the zhang lao in charge continued to try to get in between the two elders. Those two usually never cause others to worry.

As he thought about it, Zhang Men showed signs of regret and hopelessness between his brows.

"Master...I heard something fun is happening here!" Out of nowhere, out jumped a lady. She came across as extremely perky and lively, as she directly lingered around the zhang lao in charge.

That lady is Zi Yan; she was the one who refused to let Xuan Luo go once upon a time. If Xuan Luo saw her, he would recognize her immediately. If Zi Yan were to ever catch him entering the female territory by mistake again, that would probably be the end of him (he would not be able to go back\* is the exact translation, but it's implied he will not be able to get back because she will not let him go).

Soon after, Zi Yan sees Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi still continuing their ridiculous fight on the side. She instantaneously grinned and cheered, "Wonderful! Awesome! Beat him! Beat him!"

Zi Yan was hyper as she watched Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi. This is a moment when everything is about to turn into a great mess. How can she miss out on such a fun scene? Zi Yan clapped her hands excitedly as she watched the two elders battle.

"Stop with the nonsense!" Seeing Zi Yan act this way, the zhang lao in charge crinkled his brows and showed signs of frustration through his voice.

The harsh tone was immediately effective. Zi Yan instantly sobered up. She wanted to think of an explanation, but noticed that the zhang lao in charge's sight was on the ba gua stage; where Xuan Luo and Zhan Feng Hua were standing (Okay, this is so confusing. I thought Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi were on the ba gua stage...what the hell...so I assumed the elders flew back onto their platform? Omg, author -\_-")

Zi Yan was curious, so her gaze followed zhang lao's direction. As she looked at the stage, she noticed the pervert from that day years ago - Xuan Luo.

Zi Yan's mouth twitched. She angrily shouted, "Why is it the pervert?"

Originally, she was very restless. But since it was Xuan Luo the pervert, she lost all interest. She looked elsewhere and something else seemed to have caught her attention. With a blink of an eye, she was nowhere to be seen.

Of course, Xuan Luo was unaware of any of this. Currently, his eyes are only on Zhan Feng Hua. It's a well known fact that Zi Yang Palace has few

disciples. The only ones who could compete in this competition were Xuan Yuan Duan Ai, Tang Chen, and himself. But right now, there are no one else left. If he loses, then the single-elimination battle would be over.

Although there was still the group battle, the group battle only has two rounds. Remember, Xuan Luo, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen only created their group three days ago. Although within three days, they have bonded very well; but regardless, three days is still quite short. Not only does a group rely on their fighting abilities, how well their hearts are linked together also play a strong factor when it comes to victory.

The lack of time they had spent together already puts them at a disadvantage.

Thus, no matter what, Xuan Luo must win the next two battles! (Wu Di was eliminated, but there is still Zhan Feng Hua and one other guy).

Earlier, Tang Chen used all his strength on Zhan Feng Hua. Hence, Zhan Feng Hua looked a bit weak at the moment.

Xuan Luo glared at Zhan Feng Hua; his fighting aura was strong. However, he was very cautious because he wasn't sure how much strength Zhan Feng Hua has left. Therefore, he has no choice but to be wary. This may be his last chance.

Earlier, Xuan Luo wasn't aware of all the rules. That's why he didn't go on stage in advance. Within three days, as long as you're being sincere and honest with each other, being friends is quite easy. At least within these three days of bondage, Xuan Luo, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen got to understand each other better. Of course, there are still some

secrets they have not revealed to each other (Okay, in my opinion, this paragraph is totally useless. I would have eliminated the whole thing but it makes me an irresponsible translator so I just translated it anyway. It doesn't even flow and I think the author just wanted to fill up space --).

As for Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen, they are quite impressed with their shi di (Xuan Luo). Xuan Luo has only been with Wu Dang for two years, so they find his abilities quite unbelievable. They tried their best to pave the road for Xuan Luo; by using up most of the opponent's strengths.

Tang Chen had fought with Xuan Luo once. He knows Xuan Luo cannot cultivate nei li (lol, but he can!? Tang Chen, you suck). However, Xuan Luo has a strange body spell; even he cannot figure out where it is from. Regardless, he's still not too confident about Xuan Luo's abilities.

As Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen watched from below the stage, they subconsciously started to shake in fear and excitement.

The two of them exchanged glances. Then, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai hesitantly whispered to Tang Chen, "Xuan Luo should win this round, right?"

Tang Chen frowned. "Zhan Feng Hua's nei li is very strong. In Chun Yang Palace, he is one of the best. Earlier when I battled with him using my spirit, I experienced his powers. But because of our battle, I have also used up quite a lot of his energy. Let's hope Xuan Luo can take advantage of this."

Once again, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen put all their focus back

on the ba gua stage.

Zhan Feng Hua did not move. His battle with Tang Chen definitely used up a lot of his mental energy. As a result, he is not moving. If his enemy remains still, he shall remain still. If the enemy moves, he will move. This is a well known quote in a battle. Both Xuan Luo and Zhan Feng Hua are feeling the same way..

The audience is confused. Earlier, many disciples were unable to see the battles of the spirit. Now, they're wondering if it's happening again? It seemed outrageous that the two were only staring at each other.

"Hey..is Xuan Luo and Zhan Feng Hua..." Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's abilities are not advanced enough; hence he cannot tell if there is a battle of the spirits going on. He turned his head and asked Tang Chen.

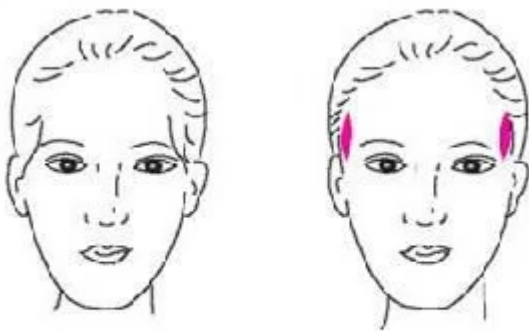
"No, they haven't started battling yet. Currently, no spirits have been moved..." Suddenly, Tang Chen creased his brows and yelped, "Oh no! I totally forgot to tell Xuan Luo something extremely important. Oh my goodness, at this rate, my earlier efforts will be put in vain...."

Tang Chen deeply sighed. Right now, only regret could be seen on his face.

'Not moving can beat moving' was not something his level could achieve. Tang Chen is only at the border of it. Only those who are the top of Wu Dang can do it. 'Not moving can beat moving...' (What it means is that not making a move is actually more advantageous than making a move)

Suddenly, Zhan Feng Hua moved. He no longer had the patience to wait with Xuan Luo. During this period of time, he has already restored a lot of his nei li; that is one thing Xuan Luo didn't expect.

Right now, Zhan Feng Hua is heading straight for Xuan Luo. He hooked his wrist and immediately aimed for Xuan Luo's tai yang xue (aka the temple in English). At the same time, his sight kept changing; as if he was trying to predict Xuan Luo's next moves.



360° 太阳穴整形示意图

(lol I found a pic of the tai yang xue so it's easier for you to picture. It's the pink area)

But Xuan Luo was still standing still as Zhan Feng Hua's attack was about to land on him.

"Xuan Luo!" Tang Chen loudly hollered. At this moment, Tang Chen couldn't help but freak out.

The tai yang xue is one of the body's lethal point. If it experiences trauma, it could lead to death or disability.

But this competition is between the two palaces. Both palaces are part of Wu Dang. Will Zhang Men and the zhang lao in charge allow this to happen?

The answer isn't clear. Although it is under special circumstances, disciples getting hurt from competitions are common. Right now, there are so many zhang lao watching. Will Zhang Feng Hua really use a fatal attack on Xuan Luo?



## Chapter 32 The Accident

Zhan Feng Hua's attack was brisk and vicious. That was something Xuan Luo did not expect. However, just as Zhan Feng Hua was about to touch him, Xuan Luo suddenly shifted and avoided the hit.

Actually, when Zhan Feng Hua was only two steps away from him, Xuan Luo could already feel the wind from his fist. He knew there was massive power within the fist; he could feel Zhan Feng Hua's nei li.

Back when he was in Qian Deng Zhen, Xuan Luo had accidentally unleashed his nei li before. His strength increased enormously when his nei li spread down to his fists.

Thus, he knows that if he were to get hit by Zhan Feng Hua, he is doomed. Therefore, he carefully analyzed Zhan Feng Hua's movements; searching for his flaws. In an electrifying moment, Xuan Luo's mind had already thought of many possibilities.

Therefore, Xuan Luo managed to avoid the hit by a thread. However, he still experienced an aching pain on his arm. The pain was from the outer nei li that Zhan Feng Hua projected.

Deep down, Xuan Luo sighed a breath of relief. He was fortunate he managed to avoid it just in time.

Although Zhan Feng Hua failed to land his punch, he reacted very quickly. Once again, he charged at Xuan Luo. But Xuan Luo has learnt his

lesson, he is not going to get hit (well, he will try his best not to get hit lol).

Xuan Luo used his ba gua steps to avoid the hits, while at the same time, he also used his tai chi fist to dissolve Zhan Feng Hua's attacks.

But although Xuan Luo battled with Tian Yu Zi daily, he has truly only dealt with Tian Yu Zi. Tian Yu Zi basically never attacked him. Each time, Xuan Luo was always the one who attacked first; while Tian Yu Zi defended. As a result, Xuan Luo's experience is pretty much zero. Fortunately, in the past two years, he has learnt to quickly adapt to his surroundings and opponents.

Most of Zhan Feng Hua's nei lai has been restored. Seeing Xuan Luo defending himself with his sequence of movements, Zhan Feng Hua felt irritated (like he's not good enough). Therefore, he increased the strength of his attacks.

This is totally different from fighting with Tian Yu Zi. When Xuan Luo fought with Tian Yu Zi, he was always attacking while Tian Yu Zi defended. But now, the table has turned. Within a short period of time, Xuan Luo has already been struck many times. He has bruises and scars everywhere. However, that wasn't enough to stop him from backing down. Instead, he felt more determined than ever. For Tian Yu Zi, he must fight on!

But Xuan Luo's understanding of the Tai Chi fist is incomparable to a regular person. Within this short period of time, he is already able to defend automatically. Compared to a couple minutes ago, he has already levelled up. Not only that, he can pretty much predict when and where Zhan Feng Hua's next moves would be.

Tang Chen stared at Xuan Luo; his eyes revealed his admiration.

Right now is the time, Xuan Luo told himself. Seeing Zhan Feng Hua jumped his fist (I don't know what 'jumping his fists' means... Ah...sorry), he definitely cannot let go of this opportunity!

Zhan Feng Hua's forehead was covered in sweats. His stress has increased substantially. At first, Xuan Luo had defended himself awkwardly. But now, Xuan Luo can totally handle him. How could Xuan Luo improve so quickly in such a short amount of time?

Yet, the truth was right in front of him. He sees Xuan Luo about to strike, but he reacted too slowly; and it was too late.

With a blink of an eye, Xuan Luo's fist landed directly on top of Zhan Feng Hua's lower abdomen. Xuan Luo used a lot of strength in that punch. When he was in Qian Deng Zhen practicing his quan fa, his strength had consisted of a couple hundred jin. Now, his strength is near a thousand jin.

Although the Tai Chi fist uses yin to overcome yang – with the focus on yin; it doesn't mean that the Tai Chi fist has no power. Within the yin, there is the yang. If not, how can it be considered an attack and defend quan fa?

Bang! Zhan Feng Hua directly flew out; he had both his hands on his lower abdomen. His face looked sinister and torn (He is still on stage, by the way, he just flew out from the attack).

"You lost!" Xuan Luo calmly declared. What he didn't know was, the core is within the lower abdomen; and the core is the most important thing to every Martial Artist. Having the core destroyed is more painful than death. In the Martial Arts world, the core is definitely the most valued thing.

"My core..." Zhan Feng Hua tries to unleash his xin fa. But he realizes his core has been totally shattered by Xuan Luo's fist. How is he going to live?!

"Ah!!!!!" Zhan Feng Hua became like an enraged tiger and was ready to pounce on Xuan Luo.

Spat\*

Zhan Feng Hua spat out a mouthful of fresh blood and lost consciousness.

"Zhan shi xiong!" The disciples from Chun Yang Palace directly ran up onto the ba gua stage. A group of them pointed their swords at Xuan Luo's direction. Their faces showed no mercy. They were furious. It looks as if they wanted to eat Xuan Luo.

Originally, when Xuan Luo caused Zhan Feng Hua to fly out, the disciples from Zi Yang Palace were ecstatic. Remember, Tang Chen is one of the top disciples in Zi Yang Palace. If we are not counting the person from once upon a time, Tang Chen's ability is number one in Zi Yang Palace. So, since Zhan Feng Hua defeated Tang Chen, it goes to show how powerful Zhan Feng Hua is. Therefore, seeing Zhan Feng Hua lose to

Xuan Luo, how could they not be happy?

But while they are being excited, Zhan Feng Hua's condition is not looking good.

"What did you do to him?" Wu Di angrily screamed at Xuan Luo. He pulled out his sword; his eyes were red.

Xuan Luo's punch was actually an accident. He did not pay attention to where his fist was going to land. He only did it because it was an opportunity he didn't want to miss out on. He totally underestimated the combined strength of his punch plus the acceleration of Zhan Feng Hua's jump (OH I GET IT NOW. Zhan Feng Hua was about to jump to punch him, that's what jumping his fist means.. ahahaha)

Xuan Luo is still confused. He doesn't know how bad the situation was because he honestly didn't even know what he did. His punch couldn't be fatal, right?

Xuan Luo is speechless. He doesn't know what to say. It was an accident. But even if he were to say that, would the people from Chun Yang Palace believe him? Clearly not.

All the disciples from Chun Yang Palace started pulling out their swords and got in their fighting stance. At that moment, the disciples from Zi Yang Palace couldn't hold back either. Although there are only a few of them, they are not afraid. This competition was way more entertaining compared to the past ones. In addition, most of the disciples from Zi Yang Palace who had lost hope have now regained their desire to practice.

Just like that, the battle fire of the two Palaces has been ignited...

## Chapter 33 Gong Yu

The scene on ba gua stage became very difficult to control. Of course, Zhang Men and the zhang lao in charge weren't just watching. When Xuan Luo was about to make his last punch, the zhang lao in charge's eyebrows furrowed. But what he didn't realize was that the punch would have directly landed on Zhan Feng Hua's core; shattering it.

This situation plus all the conflicts from the years between the two Palaces erupted everyone to fight. Swords have no eyes (idiom: It means that when fighting, the sword cannot tell who is friend or foe; so a lot of innocent people could get hurt, I think). Chun Yang Palace and Zi Yang Palace are now fighting amongst each other. They are totally neglecting Zheng Men, who was on stage now.

"Everyone, stop!" The zhang lao in charge shrieked. The scene looked like a chaotic market place. At once, everyone was silent.

After a few moments later, finally someone snapped out of it. Chun Yang Palace's Wu Di looked directly at the zhang lao in charge and angrily fumed, "Zhang Lao, Zhan shi xiong's core has... has been shattered by him. How is he going to live from now on?!!"

Actually, Wu Di's place in Chun Yang Palace isn't very high. However, he bonded with Zhan Feng Hua very well. During these past two years, he was able to improve so quickly due to Zhan Feng Hua's help. Therefore, it make sense why they're close. But whether it's due to self interest or other reasons, that is unknown.

"I will deal with this. You guys are acting like animals, do you think I do not exist?" The zhang lao in charge scowled at Wu Di. Wu Di lowered his head and didn't dare to utter another word.

The words of the zhang lao were effective. Everyone was now walking down the ba gua stage.

In the past, there have been incidents where disciples would be severely injured and/or even die from battles. However, it's very rare. In the past couple of decades, it has only occurred once. At that time, it was a very gifted but arrogant disciple of Zi Yang Palace. His condition was so serious that his five viscera and six bowels (these are traditional Chinese medicine terminology) experienced different levels of damage. Zhang Men was thankful he survived. An average person who has endured such damage would die, but this disciple was different. Hence, Tian Yu Zi basically flipped Wu Dang's medicine building around in order to find Wu Dang's most treasured item (by treasured item, they probably meant some type of rare plant/powder). But even with Wu Dang's best treasures and the different combinations of treasures, it couldn't do much for the disciple. They were only able to bring a little relief to his condition.

If we were to compare, the disciple's talent was around Xuan Luo's level. He also wanted to fulfill Tian Yu Zi's theory. The only thing he lacked was the ability to cultivate nei li. Therefore, he could only put all his efforts in perfecting his style. His name was Gong Yu. Actually, those in Zi Yang Palace are familiar with Gong Yu's name. However, one night, Gong Yu strangely disappeared. He didn't leave a trace.

As a result, disciples slowly stopped talking about Gong Yu. That's why during Xuan Luo and Tang Chen's talks, Gong Yu never came up. However,



it doesn't mean that Tang Chen wasn't aware of the person Gong Yu; the reason why Tang Chen practices so hard is because he wishes to get to Gong Yu's level. However, many years have passed and he still hasn't reached it yet. Since becoming like Gong Yu meant so much to him, he hasn't mentioned anything to Xuan Luo (I guess he doesn't want to tell Xuan Luo until he has achieved it). In addition, most disciples have already forgotten about this person who had once reached the peak; so Xuan Luo definitely has no access to find out.

"Tian Yu Zi, if anything happens to Zhan Feng Hua, I'm not done with you!" At this moment, Wu Ya Zi is freaking out as he sees Zhan Feng Hua's condition. He couldn't help but worry. Although Zhan Feng Hua didn't give up his current powers to practice a higher xin fa, he is one of Wu Ya Zi's favourite disciples. Within every Clan, there are always a few disciples that certain Masters like more; sometimes they don't even know why -Wu Ya Zi obviously belongs to this kind (sorry for the awkward translation, I am directly translating =\_=)

Of course, Tian Yu Zi is very protective of his disciples. He treats them like they're his children. Not to mention, Xuan Luo is definitely his type of tea. Therefore, hearing Wu Ya Zi say this, how could he hold back? Hence, the two began to fight again, and both arrived on the ba gua stage once more.

But this situation is definitely tricky and difficult to deal with. Could you really punish the disciple for harming his/her opponent? It doesn't seem right. Especially at this time and age, it is common to have deaths or injuries during competitions. They couldn't punish once something happens, right?

"Everyone, back off!" The zhang lao in charge calmly spoke out. "I am going to handle this situation!"

The zhang lao in charge went to Zhan Feng Hua's side and pressed his two palms into Zhan Feng Hua's palms; distributing his nei li into Zhan Feng Hua. Not long after, Zhan Feng Hua looked less pale. However, a shattered core could not be fixed. This is again why the core is so important to a Martial Artist.

Next, the zhang lao in charge announced that the competition was over for the time being. In the past, Zi Yang Palace had lost a talented disciple. And now, something like this is happening in Chun Yang Palace. If the situation is not dealt with properly, the disciples will talk negatively amongst each other.

Within the Tai He Dian, Zhang Men and all the other zhang laos were discussing about how they should handle this situation. The disciples from Zi Yang Palace and Chun Yang Palace were all standing outside Tai He Dian, waiting.

"In charge, what do you think we should do?" Zheng Men frowned. Although Zheng Men is supposed to be the boss, but there are things he cannot casually decide.

"We should temporarily suspend the competition! I took a look at Zhan Feng Hua. He definitely has a lot of talent. But he is in shock because his core is destroyed." The zhang lao in charge felt a bit guilty, "If I had stepped in earlier, I could have probably prevented this situation."

"You can't blame anyone for this situation. Things are often unpredictable in a competition. Who would have known?" Zhang Men tried to comfort.

“Zhang Men shi xiong, you have to speak up for me! Zhang Feng Hua is one of my best disciples from Chun Yang Palace. I was hoping he would eventually pick up Wu Dang’s highest gong fa!” Wu Ya Zi’s face looks all distorted (due to the wrinkles) as he started crying.

“Humpt!” Tian Yu Zi responded coldly, “Haven’t you forgotten about Gong Yu?”

Once this was mentioned, all four of them crinkled their brows and sighed.

Gong Yu was definitely a huge loss to Wu Dang. He was once the closest thing to Tian Yu Zi’s theory. Sadly, he disappeared without a trace.

Then, all of them took turns contributing something; especially Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi -those two basically wouldn’t stop bickering. Zheng Men and the zhang lao in charge were at a loss for words.

Fortunately, they eventually came up with a decision.

At the same time, all the disciples were anxiously waiting outside of Tai He Dian. Since this incident happened, it reminded Tang Chen of Gong Yu, and he decided to share it with Xuan Luo. Hearing this, Xuan Luo finally found out that at one point, Zi Yang Palace had reached a peak. He also decided to keep a name in his heart -Gong Yu.

## Chapter 34 Leaving the mountain

As he walked down the mountainous road, Xuan Luo's eyes looked bewildered. It was clear that he was frustrated and annoyed. He grumbled, "I can't believe I'm told to leave the mountain to complete a task. Ugh! I haven't even started learning the sword yet!"

It isn't surprising that Xuan Luo felt this way. In regards to Zhan Feng Hua, neither Tian Yu Zi nor Wu Ya Zi were willing to back off. Coincidentally, Tian Yu Zi found out from the information department that Zhao biao tou was having some issues in Du Cheng. He needed help, so Tian Yu Zi arranged Xuan Luo to leave Wu Dang to assist him.

In regards to this, Xuan Luo couldn't understand. Clearly, it was an accident. So why is this the conclusion? But with frustration aside, at least he isn't the only one leaving the mountain; luckily he is accompanied by Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen.

"Xuan Luo, just let it go. We all know Wu Ya Zi's temper is the worse in Wu Dang. Master Tian Yu Zi is telling you to leave because he wants to shield you from harm." Hearing Xuan Luo's frustrations and complaints throughout their journey is causing Tang Chen to laugh. Although Xuan Luo could be very comical at times, there are still some differences between him and Tian Yu Zi. Under different circumstances, sometimes his words could shock you.

"Yes. Stop dwelling yourself in this. Most of the time, we're not allowed to leave the mountain even if we wanted to! You already got a good deal. So quit complaining!" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai added.

Hearing this, Xuan Luo didn't say anymore. He knows that Tian Yu Zi is doing this for his own good.

Zhang Men, the one in charge, Tian Yu Zi and Wu Ya Zi discussed for half a day and ultimately decided that this was the best outcome. If Xuan Luo were to stay in Wu Dang at this time, he would definitely become Chun Yang Palace's sworn enemy. There would be lots of troublesome issues arising, since Xuan Luo has damaged one of Chun Yang Palace's best disciples.

But, this was something that couldn't be helped. How would Xuan Luo have known that his strength was this enormous? He did not use any nei li, yet he still shattered Zhan Feng Hua's core. He doesn't know whether he should laugh or cry.

There are always going to be unpredictable factors in a competition. However, Chun Yang Palace is way too unreasonable; it is alright if they hurt other people, but it's not alright if other people hurt their people. So arrogant.

"Um, Tang Chen xiong, Duan Ai xiong, I want to go drop by my home. I haven't been home for two years." Xuan Luo looked up at the azure sky; his gaze looked distant.

Seeing Xuan Luo like this, how could Tang Chen and Xuan Yuan Duan Ai not understand? The path of a Martial Artist has always been tasteless and tedious. Compared to Xuan Luo, they have both entered Wu Dang at an earlier age. They have certainly experienced the loneliness.

But when Xuan Yuan Duan Ai heard the word "home", his eyes revealed a bit of anguish. Although it quickly disappeared, it was definitely revealed.

"Sounds good. I also have some issues I need to deal with. We shall meet in Du Cheng!" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai thought about it, and decided.

"Okay. Let's meet in Du Cheng then! We'll meet at Zhao biao tou's store!" continued Tang Chen. "The reason why Master told us to come down is to help Zhao biao tou. Apparently he has been having some trouble."

"Okay. It's been decided!" Xuan Luo and Xuan Yuan Duan Ai spoke in unison.

Then, the three of them separated.

These past two years of practicing Martial Arts has made Xuan Luo's body much sturdier compared to the time when he had left Qian Deng Zhen. The only thing that doesn't match his body is his skin colour. During his time in Wu Dang, his original bronze skin colour has become sparkling, smooth and exquisite.

If Xuan Luo wore a feminine hairstyle, he would definitely attract many loafers...

As he walked on the path towards his home, Xuan Luo felt some excitement as well as another feeling he found difficult to explain. One of the stronger emotions he was experiencing was discouragement. Bai Tian

went missing, and from that day onwards, he has never seen him again. Originally, he thought Bai Tian would have gone to Wu Dang on his own, but clearly that didn't happen. Although during the past two years he had spent most of his time practicing, it doesn't mean he has never thought of Bai Tian.

After some time, the sky began to slowly darken and Xuan Luo's stomach also started to make noises.

Fortunately, there was a small village nearby. Xuan Luo could stay there for a night and grab a bite. The small village was called Xia Luo village. He remembers this village from his past. Once, he had lost Bai Tian within the mountains; it was the people from this village that helped save Bai Tian. Also, it was during this time that he stumbled across the ragged book.

Subconsciously, Xuan Luo's mind went back to that very day.

----

Underneath the grey misty sky, the sound of rain could be heard. It splattered across the ground and shattered the silence as it struck against the window ledge of the houses. There was no prior indication that it would rain so hard.

"Damn it. Why are we so unlucky? We've only been out for a short time, and now it's raining so hard. How depressing!" Xuan Luo couldn't help but moan at the rain. Fortunately, both him and Bai Tian found a broken unused house between the mountains to avoid the rain.

Bai Tian smirked as he looked at the grouchy Xuan Luo. He mischievously teased, "Xuan Luo, you haven't showered for many days. Your body smells. This rain is good. It's forcing you to shower. See, God treats you well!"

Hearing this, Xuan Luo smiled and countered, "Bai Tian, how dare you say that about me? What about you? I think you haven't showered in awhile too! The rain is specifically prepared for you!"

Then, Xuan Luo nodded and pretended to think deeply. Seeing Bai Tian's expression, he laughed out loud.

Bai Tian didn't say a word, but it appeared as if he was blushing. Xuan Luo probably spoke the truth and managed to hit right on the red target.

At the time, Xuan Luo was only eleven and easily bored. Therefore, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian decided to go exploring behind the mountain. They were also going to hunt for food, since they were both capable of killing most average beasts.

"Bai Tian, we've been lost for two to three days now. At this rate, a wolf is going to find our remains and gobble us!" Xuan Luo looked outside the window and sighed. It seemed like a good idea at the time, but who would have thought something like this would happen?

"Fortunately, there are edible fruits here. If not, what you said will probably come true. I think if we could hang on for a couple more days, perhaps someone will be able to find us and rescue us." Bai Tian sat down on a pile of straw as he played with a rice straw, and sighed.



“When is this rain going to end?” Without thinking, both of them asked the same question at the same time. In a split second, they both looked at each other and smiled.

Xuan Luo and Bai Tian’s clothes were drenched from the rain. Luckily, there were scattered branches and straws in the broken house. Therefore, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian gathered them up and created a small bonfire.

The two of them took off their clothes, and only left their underpants on. Using long branches, they hung up their clothes near the fire so it could dry up.

If they kept the wet clothes on, they could catch a cold.

After awhile, the sky finally cleared up and the fire has been extinguished. Within the broken house were two young lads embraced together while wearing only their underpants; sleeping soundly.

“Bai Tian, get up! We need to strive to find our way home today!” Xuan Luo had woken up and already changed back into his dried clothes.

Bai Tian was still dreaming and reluctant to wake up. It took him quite awhile before he slowly put his clothes back on.

## Chapter 35 A pack of wolves

As they left the broken house, a gust of fresh and breezy wind blew across their cheeks. It was a very refreshing feeling.

"Let's go..." Xuan Luo could see that Bai Tian's eyes looked drowsy. He disregarded it and kept on walking.

"Wu wu..." A crying sound could be heard nearby. Xuan Luo and Bai Tian were confused. What was going on? They are on the mountains yet there's a child crying?

But after quickly thinking about it, Xuan Luo came to the realization that something was wrong. How could there be a child in the middle of the mountains?

"Oh no, it's a wolf!" Xuan Luo's brows furrowed. Not far from where they were stood a wolf, and it was staring right at Xuan Luo and Bai Tian. Since the rain had only recently stopped, Xuan Luo was surprised to see a wolf hunting for a prey so soon.

Hearing Xuan Luo's voice, Bai Tian turned to take a look. He looked unimpressed and said, "Xuan Luo, you're making such a big deal. It's just a wolf. Why are you afraid? We can chase it away!"

Bai Tian then grabbed a wooden stick from the ground and headed

towards the wolf's direction. During their exploration, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian have come across ferocious beasts that were similar to the wolf. Fortunately, they have acquired some basic fighting techniques from Master Li. If not, they definitely wouldn't dare to explore the mountains on their own. Although Master Li has only taught them simple fist techniques, it was enough for them to protect themselves.

Bai Tian lazily approached the wolf, with the wooden stick in his hand. Once he was at a close proximity to the wolf, he waved his stick; attempting to scare the wolf away. Unexpectedly, the pupil of his eyes started to miniaturize. His whatever face suddenly transformed into fear. He struggled to turn around as he loudly hollered, "Xuan Luo, it's not a wolf. It's a pack of wolves. Run!!!"

Immediately, Bai Tian drops his wooden stick and runs back to where he came from.

Xuan Luo also quickly turns around and used all his strength to run. Both of them are now running -one ahead of the other, while a pack of wolves were right behind them...

Honestly, a wolf on its own is not scary. The scary thing is when they are in a pack. There is no way you can handle them all unless you possess strong Martial Arts abilities. If not, don't even think about surviving from ten thousand wolves\*...

[tl: \* It's not actually ten thousand wolves, but an expression. Basically, it means a lot. I translated it as ten thousand because that's what it says in Chinese. Don't take it literally. ]

Although Xuan Luo and Bai Tian are not yet twelve, their running abilities are very impressive. They were actually developed during these past two days on the mountain.

As the pack of wolves got closer and closer, Bai Tian and Xuan Luo were horrified and baffled. In front of them was a cliff, while behind them were the wolves. It was difficult to choose between the two. Regardless whether they choose to advance or retreat, the outcome didn't look good. They don't know what would be waiting for them under the cliff.

"Let's risk it all! We are going to die anyway. At least, take some of them with us!" Seeing this situation, Xuan Luo shrieked. Actually, Xuan Luo's thoughts were very simple. If they were to jump off the cliff, their chances of surviving would be slim. Whereas, if they try fighting for their lives, perhaps they would have a higher chance of living!

Bai Tian looked at Xuan Luo and let out a yell. The two of them then stood with their backs against each other. Both of them had their fists tightened and their horse stance ready.

Although Xuan Luo and Bai Tian didn't start learning basic Martial Arts until they were ten, and that they normally only practiced the most basic horse stance, they have accumulated a good foundation. Right now, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian are releasing all their potential.

Since Xuan Luo and Bai Tian were no longer moving, the pack of wolves also stopped. The wolves were looking at them like they were food.

One by one, the wolves sprinted to attack. Xuan Luo and Bai Tian looked at each other with one eye and nodded in unison. Then, they

separated.

(Punch)

Xuan Luo timed it correctly and his fists landed right on the wolves' heads.

(Wu Wu)

The wolves that were struck flew a short distance and made the "wu wu" sound on the ground. But not long after, they would get back up again.

At the same time, the wolf pack started howling together. The mountains were filled with their sounds.

Seeing this, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian could tell they were in a bad situation. The wolves were definitely vigorous. If they were to maximize their powers, their strength would be equal to a couple hundred jin. Yet, that was still not enough to kill the wolves.

One by one, the wolves attacked Xuan Luo and Bai Tian. After a couple of rounds, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian were definitely much weaker physically. Their willpower to fight were also decreasing drastically as well.

But their current situation didn't allow them to relax.

Suddenly, they realized that many of the wolves were starting to lose

their willpower to fight. A glimpse of hope finally appeared in Xuan Luo and Bai Tian's eyes.

The constant fighting were starting to wear the wolves out. Their willpower were decreasing faster and faster. But by now, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian's clothes were all torn and soaked with blood.

Xuan Luo and Bai Tian have already used up all their physical strength. The only thing that they have left was their mental wish to hold on. Without that thought, they would be inside the belly of the wolves right now; and eventually become nourishment for the soil.

Currently, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian were at the verge of collapsing. They were standing by the border of the cliff. Within the pack, there were still many wolves that were gazing intently at them. However, they didn't dare to approach.

After all, Xuan Luo and Bai Tian had used up most of their fighting strength. Now, most of them were just howling in pain.

But at this moment, a wolf decided to pounce on Xuan Luo.

Xuan Luo was already stumbling, with the wolf's attack, he totally lost his balance as he fell straight off the cliff. Unfortunately for the wolf, he also fell off the cliff.

Bai Tian was also stumbling, and at that moment, Xuan Luo accidentally pulled him down with him as well.

Thus, two people and a wolf have fallen off the cliff.

As he was remembering this, Xuan Luo couldn't help but laugh. Fortunately, they were able to get through the daunting experience without mishap.

-----

The sky was starting to turn white. The sun rays splattered onto Xuan Luo's cheeks. He was in severe pain. He couldn't tell how many bones he had shattered...

Xuan Luo then recalled what had happened. He was fighting with a wolf. Right now, he's lost and confused. He has totally no idea where he was.

He looked at the scenery around him. He felt uncomfortable. He sees a zigzagging stream that flowed in between a valley. Suddenly, he realizes that he was sitting on something.

With difficulty, he got up and looked down. He was in shock!

It turned out it was the body of the wolf. Except, the body has totally been squished. The wolf was literally as flat as paper.

Xuan Luo was fortunate. As both him and the wolf were falling off the cliff, the wolf ended up landing before he did. Since he landed on the wolf, his life was spared.

Then again, the cliff wasn't extremely high. If it were higher, even with the wolf under him, he would still have died.

Seeing this, Xuan Luo couldn't help but feel lucky.

Xuan Luo then snapped out of his daze and looked at the flattened wolf. His gut told him there was something within his stomach. Therefore, Xuan Luo used his hands to open up the wolf's stomach.

This wolf was the leader of the pack. His body wasn't as big as most wolves\*\* Xuan Luo took out the yellow oily paper package from the stomach and rinsed it out at the river nearby. It turned out the package was actually a book. But as he flipped through it, nothing made sense to him. Nonetheless, he decided to keep the book.

[tl: \*\* Really? I would have thought the leader would be bigger than most wolves... ]

Xuan Luo looked up at the sky and looked at the four corners around him. Every step was a challenge; every step was a mental and physical test for him.

But right now, Xuan Luo wasn't thinking about himself. Instead, he was thinking about Bai Tian. Earlier, as he fell off the cliff, he had pulled Bai Tian down with him as well. But right now, he doesn't see Bai Tian anywhere. Xuan Luo couldn't help but worry. He is praying in his heart that Bai Tian was alright!



## Chapter 36 The cave

Xuan Luo was in a daze as he followed the direction of the stream. Suddenly, he seemed to spot something. There seemed to be something behind the vine from the cliff. He was curious and immediately hurried towards it. However, due to his injuries, he was slow. Very slow...

Once Xuan Luo got closer, he could see that there was a cave behind the vine. From the cave, out came a breeze of cold wind. It was chilly; Xuan Luo couldn't help but shiver.

For some odd reason, his mind could feel that something was inside; it was calling him to go in. Xuan Luo didn't know how to describe the feeling.

Xuan Luo pushed the vine aside and dragged his beaten body inside.

Although the cave was dim, there was still some hint of sunlight; a person with average vision could still see clearly.

Xuan Luo fixedly looked inside, and everything looked out of this world.

The silence of the cave was shattered by the water dripping down from a rock; the rhythm was very steady and sharp -it was beautiful.

Once inside, Xuan Luo finally experienced the frigidness of a cave. Although it was the height of summer, from inside the cave, the blistering

heat couldn't be felt at all.

All of a sudden, Xuan Luo felt pain everywhere and could no longer endure it. He lost consciousness. At this moment, the water dripping from the rock dripped onto Xuan Luo's cheek; and Xuan Luo's body was absorbing it.

-----

After a long time, Xuan Luo opened his eyes once again. However, this time, his body felt particularly relaxed; all the pain from before had vanished.

Xuan Luo felt very puzzled by the change. How was it possible that all the scars from the wolves were gone?

But being puzzled is one thing, at least things are looking on a brighter side. Thus, Xuan Luo did not try to investigate. His body has healed and now he is starting to look up and down at the cave.

There were also a lot of vines inside the cave. However, they weren't as thick as the ones from the outside. Every so often, drops of water from a rock would fall onto his cheek. Xuan Luo was curious and decided to look up; all he saw was a droplet that was slowly forming.

Xuan Luo used the corner of his mouth to try to get a taste of the droplet. It was slightly sweet, and after swallowing it, he felt a warm current running through his entire body. It felt great. Earlier, while he was unconscious, he didn't feel anything nearly as strong as this. Currently,

Xuan Luo can truly feel it.

Xuan Luo thought to himself, could this water be the reason why my scars have all healed?

But thinking on a deeper level, this thought seemed a bit ridiculous. Even if Hua Tuo\* came back to life, he wouldn't be able to connect all his broken bones back together while not inflicting any pain upon him; as well as giving him a warm relaxing current to run through his body.

[tl: \*Apparently, he's a famous doctor at the end of Han Dynasty. ]

But what Xuan Luo didn't know was that there are many living things in the world that are phenomenal.

Xuan Luo didn't expect something so bizarre to happen within the cave. However, since he was all better, he didn't care anymore. He only wanted to find Bai Tian.

Since this water has the ability to heal, how could Xuan Luo not think of Bai Tian? Falling from such a high area...even if he's not dead, he would definitely be in a critical condition.

Xuan Luo is starting to panic. He hopes Bai Tian isn't dead or in a critical condition. If he was in a critical condition, at least the water droplets could help him. But if he was dead, then he has no face to face Bai Tian's family.

Xuan Luo gets up and rushes towards the entrance of the cave.

Originally, he meant to find Bai Tian immediately. But as time went by, the pain was too much for him and his mind no longer functioned properly. Somehow, he ended up in this cave.

Xuan Luo was curious about the droplets from the cave. How come it has the ability to heal? Originally, he was in a critical condition. Yet, within a short amount of time, most of his wounds have already healed. He wanted to find out. However, the walls within the cave were slippery. Although he had regained most of his strength, he didn't have enough strength to climb onto the top of the cave to find out where the water source came from. After all, Xuan Luo currently couldn't fly yet. Hence, he gave up and walked out of the cave.

After he left the cave, he followed the directions of the stream. Old people have often told him that where there is water, there is a place; where there is a place, there is a family.

Xuan Luo is still praying that Bai Tian is well. He wants to share the xin fa with Bai Tian. Plus, Bai Tian mainly fell off the cliff because of him. Xuan Luo feels guilty and responsible.

"Bai Tian, please be alright!" Xuan Luo's steps became faster and faster. Within a short distance, he sees smoke. Xuan Luo's heart feels a thump.

-----

"Miss, could you tell me where I am?" Xuan Luo had followed the stream here. He has no idea where he was. Thus, he politely asked the woman in front of him.

The woman was very kind. She smiled at Xuan Luo and warmly responded, "This is Xia Luo village. Xiao xiong di, are you passing by?"\*\*

[tl: \*\*Isn't it obvious he is passing by? Clearly he didn't mean to come here intentionally? :S ]

Xuan Luo vaguely remembers Xia Luo village. He knows that there is still quite a big distance between Qian Deng Zhen and Xia Luo village. He has heard adults mentioning about the village before. However, the villagers from these two places basically do not care or meddle in each other's businesses. After all, they each have their water and land. They do not care too much for materialistic things.

"Miss, I am from Qian Deng Zhen. My friend and I have been separated while we were in the mountainous woods. I noticed your smoke and came here." Xuan Luo honestly replied, "I wonder if you have seen a boy around this height and looks like this. He is around my age."

Since he has arrived at a place, Xuan Luo really wanted to sit down and rest. But right now was not the time. He doesn't even know if Bai Tian was still alive. How could he act so carefree?" "Young lad, I am unsure. Perhaps you should ask other people, maybe they have seen him." The woman was apologetic as she responded with a smile.

"Thanks, Miss..." Before Xuan Luo could finish talking, his stomach made two growling noises. Xuan Luo tries to cover his stomach as he turns around to leave.

"Young lad, it's already noon. I see you're by yourself, why don't you eat here before you go?!" The middle aged woman laughed as she heard

Xuan Luo's growling stomach. She suggested because she noticed Xuan Luo's awkward expression.

"That would be too much trouble..." Xuan Luo stared back blankly and mildly rejected.

"No trouble. You need strength to find your friend. In your current state, you're going to faint before you find your friend! We don't have much selection here, please don't mind."

Xuan Luo decided that what the woman said made sense. Therefore, he followed the woman inside. The people from the village were simple, generous, and honest. Xuan Luo couldn't help but think of his villagers back home. Weren't they all simple, generous and kind?

The woman's home was right next to the stream. The house was entirely made out of wood, and the colour was very pleasing to the eye. "Here, eat..." The woman placed a bowl of rice in front of Xuan Luo. Xuan Luo thanked the woman and swallowed everything in one gulp.\*\*\*

[tl: \*\*\*an idiom. He didn't actually swallow everything in one gulp. It just meant he ate like a savage lol. ]

For the past few days, all Xuan Luo and Bai Tian ate were the wild fruits they had found in the mountains. His stomach has long lost its taste. Now that there is rice, it seemed extra delicious.

"Mom, I'm back!" A rough voice could be heard from the door. Hearing this, the woman placed another bowl onto the table.

"Hu Zi, you're back. You must be tired today, please come eat..." Hu Zi did not seem to notice Xuan Luo's presence as he focused on eating his rice. However, actually, Hu Zi did notice. The reason why he didn't react is because he knows his mother is very kind hearted. Oftentimes, she would invite lost strangers into the house for a meal and chat with them.

Hu Zi's father passed away at a very young age. In this household, it was only the woman and Hu Zi. On a regular day, Hu Zi would do some farming while the woman would stay home alone; bored out of her mind.

"Mother, a young lad was found floating along the stream today. His condition is very serious. Right now he's at the old man's place. I wonder if he woke up yet." On the table, Hu Zi suddenly brought up an incident.

"Really? Is the child okay? How is he now?" Since the woman was so kind hearted, she reacted as if it was a close relative of hers.

"Not sure. But old man frowned a lot. It doesn't look good!" Hu Zi sighed.

Hearing this, the first thought that came to Xuan Luo was that it must be Bai Tian. He immediately puts down his bowl and anxiously asked, "Da ge, where is this guy now?" Hu Zi and the woman were a bit stunned by Xuan Luo's big reaction; although they quickly snapped out of it.

"Hu Zi, the boy might be this young lad's friend. After you finish your meal, please take him to see old man!"

"Thank you, Miss..." Xuan Luo was ten thousand times thankful\*\*\*\*

[tl: \*\*\*\* What's with Chinese and ten thousand.. For your information, back then, when subjects bowed down to the King, they always say, "King, ten thousand years, ten thousand years old!" (They basically have to say that every time they greet a King. So lame. Fortunately, it sounds less ridiculous in Chinese) ]



## Chapter 37 Brothers

Xuan Luo was honestly too worried about Bai Tian, he couldn't eat mindfully. There weren't much rice left though, so he quickly finished it and dragged Hu Zi to find Bai Tian.

"Da ge, thank you so much." Hu Zi took him to where the old man lived and Xuan Luo was extremely thankful. His feet weren't steady, but he ran straight into the straw room\* The straw room wasn't big, and Xuan Luo immediately saw a person lying there. Xuan Luo's heart tingled as he rushed over; unintentionally, tears started rolling down from the corner of his eyes.

[tl: \*The straw room is a room filled with straws on the ground. It looks something like this: <http://graphicleftovers.com/graphic/interior-of-old-barn-straw-bales-85857/> <- but not European. Think Ancient China. ]

"Bai Tian, are you alright?" cried Xuan Luo as he noticed all of Bai Tian's scars. But Bai Tian could not hear him. Bai Tian had fallen into a coma; he looked as if he died in his sleep.

"Ugh! What are you doing, young lad?" The old man came out. Seeing Xuan Luo kneeled down next to the patient's bedside, he was frustrated. "You better not cause more damage on top of his current damage!"

Xuan Luo snapped back into reality and looked at the old man. He begged, "Doctor, please save him..." Seeing Xuan Luo's sincere expression, the old man sadly shook his head, "It's all on him now."

Hearing this, Xuan Luo felt as if the clear sky has been covered by a clap of thunder. He sat in a daze and looked hopeless. The old man saw Xuan Luo's expression and felt helpless. Although he was a doctor, he cannot create miracles. When it came to circumstances like these, he could only try his best.

All of a sudden, Xuan Luo remembered the water from the cave and thought of a plan.

"Since the water droplets were able to heal me in such a short amount of time, it should be able to heal Bai Tian as well!" thought Xuan Luo. When the two of them left Qian Deng Zhen, they didn't carry much with them; since the mountains were so close to their hometown. They could have gone back whenever. They never thought they would have gotten lost.

Earlier, when Xuan Luo was testing the water droplet, he was very shocked. He didn't think something like that existed. However, he was healed. Lots of strange things seem to happen to him. Thinking back, the droplets had to be the reason why his body healed so quickly.

"I deserve to die! How could I not have thought of collecting some water before coming over?!" Xuan Luo couldn't help but blame himself again. However, even if he had wanted to collect the water, there was nothing he could use to collect the water with. That was a fact.

Xuan Luo's mind was racing. He had followed the direction of the stream to get to this village. If he goes back for the water now, it would be too late. Currently, Bai Tian was on the verge of death; he could die

any time. One mistake could be too late.

But his damage was far too serious, if we are relying on him to heal himself, how would it be possible in such a short amount of time? Xuan Luo doesn't even care if Bai Tian could recover completely. Currently, he just wants Bai Tian to wake up. Being awake would help the situation.

"Since I drank/absorbed so much of the water droplets, my blood definitely possess some of the powers of the droplets. If the water droplets were really this amazing...." Xuan Luo was so worried about Bai Tian that he started thinking of crazy solutions. To him, Bai Tian is way too important; Bai Tian is the only person he could speak his heart to.

Xuan Luo didn't want to waste any more time. He directly asked the old man, "Doctor, do you have a small knife of some sort? I need a sharp object!"

The old man seemed bewildered by Xuan Luo's question. However, he couldn't figure out why Xuan Luo wanted it so he just handed a small knife to him.

Xuan Luo caught the knife, but he didn't seem to be able to focus.

"You're really going to do this?"

"I have to!"

Honestly, Xuan Luo has never thought of inflicting harm on himself. As he held the small knife, he didn't know where to start. But when he

looked at Bai Tian, determination shone through his eyes.

He used the small knife to cut his wrist, and blood immediately oozed out. The old man was in shock. Originally, he wanted to caution Xuan Luo before he did anything; but before he could say a word, Xuan Luo had already cut himself. Everything happened so fast.

Xuan Luo placed his wrist near Bai Tian's mouth and poured his blood into Bai Tian's mouth.\*\*

[tl: \*\*Oh my goodness, that's nuts. I can't believe he cut himself and made Bai Tian drink his blood..wow. ]

The old man was flabbergasted. He has no idea why Xuan Luo was giving Bai Tian his blood. Currently, he had the urgency to scream. Not only that, as a doctor, he feels at fault for not preventing Xuan Luo from hurting himself in front of him.

Xuan Luo's face was turning paler and paler as he lost more and more blood.

"Stop what you're doing now! You want to die!?!?" The old man hollered as he noticed Xuan Luo's condition. "You don't know how to love your body. How could you do such a thing?"

The old man quickly rushed to get gauze to cover Xuan Luo's wound. However, Xuan Luo was stubborn and refused. Since he noticed his cut was closing, he created another cut close to the original area because Bai Tian hadn't woken up yet.

Earlier, Xuan Luo was too fast and the old man couldn't stop him. But now, the old man was close enough to Xuan Luo and he quickly knocked him out. He used the gauze to wrap around Xuan Luo's wounds.

"This child honestly does not value his body!" The old man frowned. He was very angry at Xuan Luo.

Currently, Bai Tian's complexion has improved. Compared to before, he looked much better. Xuan Luo did not waste his blood. If one were to look carefully, Bai Tian's fingers were twitching a little.

Although the old man didn't know why Xuan Luo did what he did, but seeing Bai Tian's condition improving, he somewhat figured it out. He looked at the unconscious Xuan Luo with admiration.

———

Xuan Luo passed out for a couple of hours. However, he still woke up before Bai Tian. Looking at Xuan Luo, the old man was confused, "How come your blood....?"

Although Xuan Luo woke up, he was experiencing some post trauma effects from the loss of blood. However, since the old man mentioned this, he knew his reasoning was correct. Although it has been quite awhile since he had absorbed the droplets, the healing power still remained inside his blood.

"When I was on the mountains, I was also hurt. My condition was

similar to his. However, I randomly ate something and it healed me. Not only was I healed, I felt like I have unlimited amount of strength!" Xuan Luo smiled as he explained.

Bai Tian must be doing well. That is a good sign.

"How is he doing?" Xuan Luo was curious.

"He's healing quite well. He should wake up soon!" The old man was somewhat amused. It turned out his prediction was correct.

-----

"Bai Tian, you're finally awake!" The moment Bai Tian opened his eyes, he heard the familiar voice of Xuan Luo.

However, seeing Xuan Luo's worried expression, Bai Tian weakly smiled, "Can you stop looking like that? Your crying face makes me want to spank you!"

Bai Tian had just woken up, yet he was already teasing Xuan Luo. He didn't act like a patient at all. However, that is Bai Tian's personality. Xuan Luo knows deep inside that if Bai Tian had acted differently, he would not be Bai Tian.

"Ok. No more. How are you feeling?" Xuan Luo was curious and couldn't help but ask.

"I feel much better now! Earlier, it was as if there was a warm current running through my body. It took away most of my pain. But after awhile, the warm current disappeared!" Bai Tian seemed a bit sad about it. Since he was in a coma, he didn't know the warm current was the result of Xuan Luo's blood.

"Whatever. I don't want to bother you anymore. Quickly get better. We have been gone from home for a long period of time now. I'm sure our families are freaking out. We have to rush to get back!' Xuan Luo definitely knows why Bai Tian felt the warm current. However, that is something he must hide from Bai Tian. If Bai Tian knew, based on their friendship, Bai Tian would give him back all his blood...

That's what brothers do for each other. If one needs help, the other would never just stand aside to watch. He would try his very best to help his friend. Xuan Luo and Bai Tian's relationship was as solid as a boulder.

Just as Xuan Luo was still thinking back about the old times in Xia Luo village, he noticed that Xia Luo village was in flames. It looked very wrong. From far away, he could hear the sounds of metal weapons clashing and fighting.\*\*\*

Hearing this, Xuan Luo felt very anxious and rushed towards Xia Luo village.

[tl: \*\*\*Xuan Luo is back in the present again. Everything prior was a memory. ]

## Chapter 38 The village's incident

Hearing the noise, Xuan Luo instantly felt unease. Xia Luo village was similar to Qian Deng Zhen; they would never participate or bother with worldly affairs. Xuan Luo has a very bad feeling about this.

Since Xuan Luo felt rushed, he subconsciously unleashed his tai chi steps towards the village. He definitely didn't realize how fast he was going. However, if others saw him, they would merely see his shadow.

Without intending, he has arrived at Hu Zi's house. Since Hu Zi's house was right at the entrance of the village, it was very easy to spot. However, he was immediately overcome by fury.

Hu Zi's mother's upper body was covered in blood; she was just lying at the entrance; her eyes were widely open. She was already dead...

"Hu Zi ge! Hu Zi ge!" Xuan Luo felt a sense of dread as he quickly pushed open all the doors. He was shrieking anxiously.

Xuan Luo opened all the doors, but Hu Zi was nowhere to be seen. Xuan Luo then ran out and knocked on every neighbour's door. However, there were no one.

But Xuan Luo was sure he heard weapons clashing. He definitely wasn't hallucinating.

"Yes! The weapons..." Xuan Luo loudly yelled. Therefore, he used his



hearing to find his direction.

In an open space, Hu Zi was being detained by a big husky guy. The big husky guy held a huge broadsword; his face looked menacing.

All the villagers were standing in the open space. Their eyes clearly showed fear. It was certainly not an act.

"If you guys do not obey our orders, this will be you!" Suddenly, a rough voice spoke up; his voice was hateful and loud.

Then, that person gave the big husky guy a signal, and the guy swiftly chopped off Hu Zi's left hand.

"Ah!!!!" Hu Zi cried in pain.

"Even if I become a ghost, I am not going to let you guys get away!" Hu Zi's eyes were scarlet and his face looked sinister.

Seeing this, all the villagers were shaking; their faces were deathly white. However, no one dared to make a sound. The man leading the group smirked as he looked at the villagers' reactions. Then, he lifted his hand to signal once more; indicating the broadsword guy to finish Hu Zi off.

Xuan Luo had arrived just in time. Seeing this, he couldn't help remember the straightforward teenager from years ago. His face darkened and his eyes gleamed.

Each of Xuan Luo's tai chi steps were filled with the principle of tai chi. Although it hasn't been fully mastered, it is still considered 'small success'.

Right when the big guy's broadsword was about to slaughter Hu Zi, Xuan Luo managed to get to him using his tai chi steps. Without holding back any strength, Xuan Luo punches the broadsword.

The broadsword vibrated a bit, and then, it shattered into pieces.

Another punch. This time, Xuan Luo directly punched the face of the man who was holding the broadsword. The force caused the man to fly out. Everything happened within a blink of an eye.

Xuan Luo did not hold back at all. He used a thousand jin worth of strength on that man's face. Who knew what the man's condition currently was...

The big husky guy was flying towards the man leading the group.

That man was in shock, but quickly reacted and horizontally kicked the man away. Thus, the man is now flying in the opposite direction. When he landed on the ground, he was no longer breathing.

"Ahhh!" The man yelled. He stood up and looked at Xuan Luo. His eyes revealed the thought of pain. He experienced the strength of Xuan Luo when he was kicking back the guy. Currently, his leg felt numb.

As for the big husky guy, his face has totally been caved in. It no longer looked like a face.

Xuan Luo didn't pay attention to the man's eyes. He bent down and anxiously asked the bloody Hu Zi, "Hu Zi ge, are you alright?!"

Seeing Xuan Luo, Hu Zi couldn't remember who it was at first. However, after seeing the kind intention from Xuan Luo's eyes, he remembered all of a sudden. With gritted teeth, he said, "My mother... she has been murdered by this group of people...."

Xuan Luo already knew. But hearing Hu Zi speaking in such a broken tone, his heart was aching. His eyes flashed, "Hu Zi ge, I will help you get your revenge!"

Xuan Luo is currently fifteen years of age. However, that doesn't mean he doesn't have a heart of a hero. Regardless if he is seeing this from a logical or emotional perspective, he would help Xia Luo village. After all, if it weren't for the kind villagers, he wouldn't have been able to see Bai Tian again. Xuan Luo was a thankful guy. At this moment, his evil side was revealing for the first time ever.

Xuan Luo got up and coldly looked at the man. "You.... you will pay for what you have done!"

"HAHAHAHA!" The man was laughing. He didn't take Xuan Luo's words seriously. "Alright. I'll show you who's going to be paying the price!!!"

Although Xuan Luo had only spent a few days with Hu Zi, he still

considered him a 'big brother'. Hu Zi was straightforward, honest, liked to shake his head, kind, but most importantly, filial. Because he came from a single parent household, Hu Zi basically took care of everything. Yet, he never complained. Instead, he lived his life to his fullest. Xuan Luo and Hu Zi got along very well. During the times when Bai Tian was in a severe condition, Xuan Luo and Hu Zi hung out a lot.

When the man saw Xuan Luo arriving to the open space like a ghost, he could already tell that Xuan Luo was no ordinary person. Most importantly, the punch that looked "weak" actually caused the broadsword guy to fly. The man definitely knows the strength Xuan Luo holds.

The man wasn't in a rush to fight. Based on appearance, he looked approximately thirty years of age. He had a thick killer aura surrounding him; he has probably slaughtered hundreds of lives.

Nonetheless, that doesn't matter. What matters is that he had harmed Hu Zi, he had killed Hu Zi's mother. How can Xuan Luo accept that?

Xuan Luo makes the first move and swiftly approaches the man using his tai chi steps.

During his practices with Tian Yu Zi, Xuan Luo's life was never in danger. However, this is totally the opposite. Any mistake he makes can lead to a serious injury, or even death.

Xuan Luo doesn't care though. Because he wants his revenge for Hu Zi's mother...

## Chapter 39 Shen Tui Men

But honestly, this man's reaction time is many times better than Xuan Luo's. As Xuan Luo was swiftly approaching with his tai chi steps, the man had already made a move.

Although Xuan Luo was fast, the man's reaction was dashing. Within a blink of an eye, the man had already pulled out his blade; ready for combat.

Seeing Hu Zi and thinking about Hu Zi's dead mother, Xuan Luo had decided the death sentence for the man early on. His current abilities may be weaker than the man; however, he still has his hidden card -nei li.

Although Xuan Luo did not purposely practice nei li while he was working with Tian Yu Zi, his nei li still increased while he was in the process of practicing the tai chi fist. The nei li in his core continued to quietly increase even when he didn't focus on it.

Xuan Luo has already achieved the border of 'success'. He only has a thin layer to break through, and he shall get there. Once he breaks through this layer, he will see a huge boost in his strength.

There are four levels in total: small success, junior, success, and peak. Each level is very difficult to achieve. The higher up it is, the more difficult it gets. Practicing will no longer be enough to go through the level. The secret to the top requires one to seek, comprehend, and feel.

Xuan Luo rushes full on; directly aiming his punch at the man; not holding back the slightest bit.

However, the man has a weapon in his hand. Since Xuan Luo is about to fight him empty handed, his mind is running. First of all, he must somehow avoid clashing straight into the blade. Next, he must somehow overtake him and hand him to Hu Zi. He wants Hu Zi to personally crush the man.

As Xuan Luo released his fist, he did not purposely control his nei li. He allowed it to naturally swim through his veins and arrived onto his fist.

Bang

The blade managed to block the first strike. But Xuan Luo's fist consisted of nei li, and it landed on the blade.

Actually, Xuan Luo was lucky. Xuan Luo would have been stabbed, but he managed to quickly twirl and avoided the sharp edge of the blade. His fist also changed direction.

However, his wrist was unfortunately cut.

Clang

The man's blade vibrated due to Xuan Luo's forceful punch. It was as if there was a magnet around it. The man's hand shook and the blade fell onto the ground.

As the blade fell, it was like a replay from before; on the blade, there were many cracked lines. Then, it was fell into pieces.

The man was shocked. He was surprised he couldn't hold the blade steady. In addition, he didn't think Xuan Luo's punch would shatter the entire blade.

But the man didn't see Xuan Luo's wound. There was a thick cut on Xuan Luo's wrist. The skin has been flipped open; fresh blood was dripping down from it.

The man didn't notice this though. His face still showed his stunned expression. How could someone as young as Xuan Luo possess such strength? He never thought it was possible. Now he knows regardless of what he does, it will be useless.

Seeing Xuan Luo, big drops of sweat started dripping down from the man's forehead.

The man wasn't alone. Behind him were a bunch of subordinates. Seeing their boss's expression, they know Xuan Luo meant trouble. In their minds, their boss's fighting skills were one of the best. If their boss cannot handle Xuan Luo, then they definitely cannot do anything.

Xuan Luo approached the man, step by step. The aura encircling his body was frightening. His steps were slow, but each step caused the man a body leaping sensation.

"This da ge\*\*...you...you..." The man was truly afraid. He knows even if his brother were to come, he still wouldn't have much of an advantage.

tl: \*\*Da ge literally means "older brother" (It is respectful to call someone 'brother' even if they're not related to you by blood). However, clearly, Xuan Luo is way younger than him. The only reason why the man is calling him "da ge" is because he thinks giving Xuan Luo a more respectful title will help his situation. ]

"I am Shen Tui Men's second dang jia. Xiao xiong di, please be a bigger person and forgive me. I was wrong...can you..." The man was stuttering and his voice couldn't hide any of his fear.

Shen Tui Men? Xuan Luo didn't expect it to be Shen Tui Men again. During his quest to Du Cheng, he recalled dealing with Shang Hua and Hu Han from Shen Tui Men. His memory is still fresh. He remembers Hu Han hurting his Stepfather. He also remembers how Shang Hua wanted to take his fist technique book because he thought it was a good one -that greedy bastard.

If Dong Fang Yu had not come by, Xuan Luo would definitely have been beaten by Shang Hua. At the time, Xuan Luo had just started learning the basics of Martial Arts informally. Back then, he only fought carelessly. Although Master Li gave him the fist technique book, and he had amazing memory plus talent, he was still no match for Shang Hua.

At that time, Xuan Luo had decided that after he was skilled in Martial Arts, the first person he would go after is Shang Hua.

Thus, hearing that this man say he was from Shen Tui Men surprised



him. He was taken aback and stood still while he thought of what he should do.

The man thought Xuan Luo was afraid of Shen Tui Men, and felt a sense of relief. His confidence started increasing from within again, and his face no longer looked so stressed. However, his thought was clearly wrong...

Xuan Luo looked at the man and continued walking towards him again. However, there was no change in his expression. The frustration and anger was actually more intense.

During these past two years, Xuan Luo's mental state had actually improved a lot at Wu Dang. He basically didn't have that particular nightmare anymore, and he had almost forgotten about it. However, right now....everything was coming back.

Xuan Luo didn't care about anything else and directly punched the man in the stomach. This punch only consisted of his brute strength; no *nei li* was involved.

The man's eyes widened and jaw dropped. He didn't think Xuan Luo would be this fast. But waiting for him was not only this punch. Within tai chi fist, there is 'swiftness amongst the slowness, as well as 'slowness hides within the swiftness'. But at this moment, it was only swiftness. It was so fast that the normal eyes could not view it clearly.

Within a couple of breaths, the man had already been beaten beyond recognition. Xuan Luo loudly roared and released his last punch. The man is now unconscious.

Although the man had been beaten beyond recognition, Xuan Luo did not feel the slightest pity for him. He glanced around at his surroundings and said, "You guys... go tell Shang Hua I am looking for him. Tell him to wash his neck and prepare for me\*\*\*\*... and yes, also tell Hu Han..."

[tl: \*\*\*\* Why wash his neck?? Neji Note : to cut a head, wash a neck is a sign of respect. lol!!!]

At that moment, everything was covered in silence. Originally, the villagers were the ones so scared that they couldn't utter a word. Now, the silent ones were Shen Tui Men...

Xuan Luo grabbed the man's collar as if he was a dog, and threw him directly in front of Hu Zi.

"Hu Zi ge, I give him to you..." Although Xuan Luo said it very quietly, Hu Zi heard his words clearly.

Hu Zi grabbed one of the shattered pieces of the blade and using only his right hand, he directly stabbed the man in the neck. His face looked sinister and his eyes were scarlet. Blood spurted up a couple metres, and the blood splattered all over Hu Zi and Xuan Luo's faces.

Then, Hu Zi fainted...

"If you guys want to stay alive, leave before I change my mind..." Xuan Luo coldly told the rest of the subordinates.

## Chapter 40 Shen Tui Men's Greed

Because Xuan Luo stepped in, the disciples from Shen Tui Men had no choice but to leave. The second dang jia had lost his life. Who would have thought?

But Shen Tui Men have always been arrogant; they often targetted the weak and young -death cannot wipe out the crimes they have committed.

The skin on Xuan Luo's wrist has totally been flipped open. The villagers were very grateful towards Xuan Luo for stepping out to help them. They didn't say it verbally though; it was something they kept within their hearts.

"Ah! So painful!" Xuan Luo didn't feel the pain on his hand during the fight. However, now, the pain was abnormally intense.

At least, the incident at the village has been dealt with. Sadly, Hu Zi's left arm is totally gone. He is now a person of disability. Once Shen Tui Men left, the villagers quickly carried Hu Zi to the old man's straw room. Xuan Luo's condition looked much more optimistic. He did lose some blood, but it's torn skin only.

However, the old man's stitching skills was indeed quite poor. It took him nearly half an hour to stitch Xuan Luo's wound, which caused Xuan Luo extreme pain. However, it still wasn't nearly as intense as the pain he had endured when he first started nei gong xin fa from the ragged book.

But the needle and the string would go through his flesh, and the old man would tug it, so you can imagine how painful it must have been.

"You're finally done..." Xuan Luo looked at his stitched wrist, and breathe out a sign of relief.

"I'm old and my sight is not so good..." The old man explained. This caused Xuan Luo to be speechless. He would rather the old man not explain. Once he started explaining, Xuan Luo felt like the old man purposely wanted to give him a hard time.

"Duan ye ye, how's Hu Zi?" Xuan Luo decided to ignore the other stuff and focused on Hu Zi's condition instead. Honestly, Hu Zi's condition was depressing.

Hu Zi's mother's death was a devastating blow to him. Hu Zi had already lost his father during his early years. Now, he has no living parent.

The old man shook his head, and he crinkled his brows. He sadly sighed, "He is still unconscious. His mother's death and everything that has happened is very traumatic for him. Not to mention, he lost his left arm. That's going to tremendously affect his daily life from now on..."

The old man couldn't help but sigh. He looked at the Hu Zi laying on the sick bed, and lightly whispered, "Chopped arms can be fixable. But my current abilities are not there yet..."

Hearing this, Xuan Luo was in shock. It's possible to connect a chopped arm back together? How high of medical expertise would that require? A

human has many jing mai that are connected very closely together. On the arm alone, are a couple of important ones. If a chopped arm was to be connected, wouldn't the jing mai have to be connected as well? How amazing and skillful must one be in order to complete such a task?

However, it is too late for Hu Zi. After a certain amount of time has passed, even if one had amazing skills, it would be too late to connect the arm back together.

Xuan Luo sadly looked at Hu Zi. Then, he turned to the old man and asked, "Duan ye ye, what were those people doing here?"

Although Xuan Luo has an impression of Shen Tui Men, they didn't seem that overboard at the time. It was a coincidence that he encountered them. At the time, his martial arts skills were low, and he couldn't do much.

Hearing Xuan Luo's question, the old man's eyes revealed a stream of hatred. He bitterly shrieked, "They're a bunch of robbers!"

"When they arrived, they went to take a rest at Hu Zi's house. Hu Zi's mother is very kind hearted...who knew..." The old man didn't continue his sentence, but Xuan Luo knew what he wanted to say.

"So Hu Zi went after those men. Hu Zi is a strong man. He has the strength to fight and most of those men were no opponents to him. However, their big boss was very strong. Within a few moves, he had taken Hu Zi down...afterwards, you know what happened!"

It turns out that Shen Tui Men are very greedy. They want to expand their influential powers and they have started attacking whatever that was around them. The old man didn't know too much, but he has heard a lot. When Shen Tui Men gathered the villagers altogether, they said, "If you will do as we say, we will spare your lives."

In order for an influential power to form, they have to constantly massacre. That is the only way to control the people. Influential power means no one dares to challenge your authority. Obviously, within every influential power, there are also those who fight for the position. That's jiang hu for you!

Two years ago, Shen Tui Men was a new influential power that appeared in Qian Deng Zhen. Who would have thought that within two years they would already spread so far? Although Xia Luo village and Qian Deng Zhen are both small villages, Xia Luo village is located a lot deeper within the mountain; it wasn't as obvious as Qian Deng Zhen. Who knew why Shen Tui Men wanted this territory?

"Duan ye ye, does that mean Shen Tui Men wants to take over this region?" Xuan Luo instantaneously asked.

"I'm not sure. But I heard them say, 'We're responsible for this location. Qian Deng Zhen is da ge's.... I assume he would have taken over it by now.' What that means...I don't know" The old man reflected.

Hearing this, Xuan Luo felt a sense of disgust. Shen Tui Men dared to reach so far.. from Xia Luo village to Qian Deng Zhen. Are they seriously planning to take over everything?

Suddenly, Xuan Luo got up and yelled, "Duan ye ye, I have to return to Qian Deng Zhen. I'll be back in a couple of days."

The old man was surprised by Xuan Luo's anxiety. He didn't know what was going on, but he didn't stop him. From Xuan Luo's expression, he could tell Xuan Luo was very nervous.

"Okay!" The old man replied.

Xuan Luo quickly left and ran towards Qian Deng Zhen.

Clearly, that man had come prepared to take over Xia Luo village. Based on what the old man had told him, Shang Hua should be the one dealing with Qian Deng Zhen. They have already planned it ahead of time. This means Shen Tui Men are already making moves all over the region.

Xuan Luo rushes towards Qian Deng Zhen, and within his heart, he kept repeating, "Please be alright, Stepfather!"

However, Xuan Luo had totally forgotten that in Qian Deng Zhen, there is still a Dong Fang Yu....

## Chapter 41 Father and Son

Xuan Luo's speed was already super fast. He didn't care about the injury on his hand. Currently, all he is thinking about is whether the villagers from Qian Deng Zhen were under the control of Shen Tui Men. He is especially worried for his Stepfather and Master Li.

The colour of the sky indicated that it was near sunset. However, that did not hinder Xuan Luo. Since he had left Xia Luo village, he basically hasn't taken a rest. He wanted to get to Qian Deng Zhen as quickly as possible.

Xuan Luo also hasn't eaten anything all day. But to him, eating is not considered an important matter. While he was practicing martial arts, he would often forget to eat. Generally, to martial artists, eating is something that could totally be skipped and it wouldn't affect them very much.

By the time Xuan Luo arrived at the entrance of his village, the Sun had set. Instead, the bright moon has taken its place.

The night view of Qian Deng Zhen looked normal. All the houses had a big red lantern hung up highly outside their doors; everywhere was brightly lit.

The village was calm and it didn't appear to have any issues.



Arriving at Qian Deng Zhen caused Xuan Luo to think of Bai Tian again. Originally, both of them left together to look for a Clan. However, now, Xuan Luo is all alone. He is missing his sidekick...

---

"Stepfather!" Xuan Luo lightly called out as he pushed the door open.

However, no one responded from inside the house. Xuan Luo's heart started to tighten again. By now, Guan Shan Jue should be home; sitting on the rock outside, drinking his wine. However, since Xuan Luo didn't see his Stepfather, he is starting to feel anxious.

"Stepfather! Stepfather!" Xuan Luo loudly hollered. He looked through every room, every corner. He basically looked everywhere, but he just couldn't find Guan Shan Jue.

Suddenly, Xuan Luo gazed passed the rock outside and looked at the small door from outside the fence.

"Oh yes!" He seemed to remember something and quickly got up and headed towards the restaurant.

As expected, although the door of the restaurant was shut, there was light inside.

"Stepfather!" Xuan Luo yelled as he pushed open the door.

The view he witnessed caused Xuan Luo to boil up with anger. Inside the restaurant, the cups and dishes were in complete disorder; the tables and chairs were all shattered on the ground. There wasn't one bit that was undamaged/untouched.

Guan Shan Jue was cleaning up. His old body was crooked, and he was moving extremely slow.

Seeing this, Xuan Luo's heart felt sour and tears couldn't help but spill out.

Xuan Luo's tears fell from the corner of his eyes and slid down from his cheek. The tears started dripping onto the ground. Since it was so quiet in the background, the sound of the teardrops could be heard clearly.

Perhaps he was surprised, but Guan Shan Jue's movement clearly stopped. He slowly straighten up his crooked back and lifted his head up. As he looked at the teenager in front of him, a kind smile formed around his mouth.

"Xuan Luo, you're back!" Guan Shan Jue's voice was light, but right now, Xuan Luo has totally lost control of his tears.

"Step...Father..." Xuan Luo stammered. His eyes were hazy, and he was crying so hard that it was difficult to hear what he was saying.

"Let me help you..." Xuan Luo took the broomstick from Guan Shan Jue's hand and helped him tidy up the restaurant. In regards to why the restaurant was in such condition, Xuan Luo didn't ask. It wasn't that he

didn't want to know, but right now, he just wanted to enjoy the moment with Guan Shan Jue.

Inside the restaurant, only a small oil lamp was lit. The dim light created a very interesting perspective; the shadows of an elder and a youth was stretched very long due to the lighting.

They were silent. However, it didn't mean that Xuan Luo had nothing to say. Likewise, Guan Shan Jue had questions to ask. But right now, the atmosphere was perfect. Neither of them wanted to disturb this touching moment.

---

By the time they were done tidying up the restaurant, it was near midnight. Xuan Luo lent his arm to Guan Shan Jue as they returned back home. On the way back, Xuan Luo experienced a lot of emotions. Stepfather has aged....stepfather has truly aged...

The house was filled with the strong love Guan Shan Jue and Xuan Luo had for each other. That night, Guan Shan Jue surprisingly didn't drink or sing his awful song. Instead, he asked Xuan Luo what he had gone through during the past two years.

Just like that, the night went by...

Xuan Luo and Guan Shan Jue didn't sleep separately like how they used to. Instead, both of them snuggled up against each other and slept very peacefully...

The eastern sky has whiten, and had already brighten up the entire sky. But inside the house, there was no disturbance. There was only soft breathing and love.

Xuan Luo couldn't remember the last time he had experienced such feeling; the feeling of not having to worry about anything. At Wu Dang, although Tian Yu Zi treated him well and Xuan Luo considered him as his grandfather, he still didn't experience this type of feeling.

Guan Shan Jue had woken up and gently raised the blanket for Xuan Luo. This gesture caused Xuan Luo to want to cry, but he held back.

Actually, the moment Guan Shan Jue got up, Xuan Luo had already woken up. As martial artists, their five senses are much stronger than the average person. Generally, any slight movement would trigger their senses. After all, they must be prepared.

Jiang hu is dangerous. At any moment, they could face an enormous threat. Although this didn't happen while Xuan Luo was in Wu Dang, Tian Yu Zi did a lot of stuff to torment Xuan Luo. For instance, while Xuan Luo was in a deep sleep, he would sneak into his room and put disgusting things on his bed...

Xuan Luo slowly opened his eyes and looked at Guan Shan Jue, "Stepfather, you're awake..." At the same time, Guan Shan Jue looked at Xuan Luo and said, "Xuan Luo, you're awake...."

In regards to the restaurant, Xuan Luo had a lot of suspicions. Who caused the mess in the restaurant? But fortunately, Guan Shan Jue did not appear to have any injuries.

“Stepfather, why was the restaurant in such disarray?”

Guan Shan Jue was caught off guard. He didn’t want anything to happen to Xuan Luo. Thus, he smiled and said, “The tables were unsteady to begin with. They were damaged because some people sat on it... aiii.. stop thinking so much. Come drink with me...”

Guan Shan Jue was definitely a terrible liar. There were holes all over his lies. But seeing his expression, Xuan Luo decided not to push it. However, he had another plan...

There are so many villagers in the village, of course someone would know what has happened!

“Okay. There’s no more wine in the house, right? I will go out and buy some!” Xuan Luo responded quickly and volunteered to buy more wine.

[tl: This is what the wine jug looks like. A jug with no handles. ]



## Chapter 42 It's Shen Tui Men again

"Bartender, bring me two jugs of good wine. To go!" Xuan Luo has arrived at the tavern, and loudly tells the dude.

Although Qian Deng Zhen is a small village, it has every type of entertainment; since the villagers have different preferences.

"Oh, is it Xuan Luo? Wow, you have grown so much in such a short time!" The boss teased and acted surprised as he looked at Xuan Luo.

"Haha, Zhang shu, we all need to grow up, don't we not? I'm no longer the little boy from before!" Xuan Luo joked.

"Yes yes! Okay, I'm going to get the wine right now. Wait a moment!" The boss was very quick. Within a few minutes, he was already back with two jugs of wine. He placed the two jugs in front of Xuan Luo, and took out a smaller jug from behind him and smiled, "This is something I secretly stored. Bring it back to Guan old man and both of you try it!"

Since Boss Zhang was being so courteous, Xuan Luo felt a little guilty.\* However, he still accepted the small jug as a gift.

*[tl: In the Chinese culture, it is normal to say you feel guilty for accepting gifts (especially if you are not giving something in return). But despite that, the person would usually accept the gift because it is considered rude to reject. So it would be something like, "Oh I feel so bad!" takes gift\* ]*

“Thank you!”

“Xuan Luo, Guan old man’s temper is overly good. In fact, in the village, no one can even say anything about it. But...aiii...” Boss Zhang suddenly brought this up as if a thought had came up.

Xuan Luo was a bit taken aback by what Boss Zhang said. He didn’t know what Boss Zhang was trying to get at. However, his Stepfather’s temper is definitely super good; not only is he one of the kindest person, he also never meddle in other people’s affairs.

“Zhang shu, what’s wrong?” Xuan Luo could hear the hint within Boss Zhang’s voice, therefore although he is smiling, deep down he feels slightly anxious.

After all, this is related to Guan Shan Jue; Boss Zhang would not specifically mention his temper for no reason.

“Ai! You know the Lee family? They have wanted your restaurant ages ago. Just yesterday, they called people and created chaos in the restaurant. Yet, Guan old man didn’t say anything. If something like that were to happen to me, I would definitely confront Old Lee!” Through Boss Zhang’s voice, Xuan Luo could hear the anger and frustration. The Lee family is clearly bullying others. Guan old man is merely a lonely old man trying to survive in the village; the restaurant is his only source of income.

Hearing this, anger flashed through Xuan Luo’s eyes. But it disappeared right away. He quickly smiled and said, “Zhang shu, thanks...”

"Why are you thanking me? I didn't do anything?!" Boss Zhang gave Xuan Luo a sloppy look.

Xuan Luo knows Boss Zhang didn't want to meddle in this muddy water, but nonetheless, he was thankful that he spread the news to him. From what he can recall, the Lee family wasn't that greedy. Why were they so ambitious now? Xuan Luo couldn't figure it out.

This is such a small village, and the restaurant business isn't big either. Why would they look for people to go after it? Xuan Luo was getting more confused by the minute. However, he isn't going to let the Lee family get away with this. He would never let anyone get away with bullying his Stepfather. Plus, they made it extra obvious.

As Xuan Luo carried the wine jugs home, he slowly approached the limestone pathway. Deep down, he has already come up with a plan to deal with the Lee family.

"Let me go, you scoundrel!" All of a sudden, a feminine voice interrupted Xuan Luo's thoughts.

As he looked up, Xuan Luo could see a guy attempting to assault an ordinary dressed girl. Xuan Luo recognizes the girl. She was Xiao Fang and Xuan Luo remembers Xiao Fang had a crush on Bai Tian. It was one sided though. Bai Tian didn't feel the same. As he thought of Bai Tian, Xuan Luo couldn't help but worry again. It has already been two years, but he hasn't heard anything from him.

"Li Shao Miao, can you stop being so shameless!?" Xiao Fang directly slaps Li Shao Miao in the face. The slap was loud and crisp to the ear.



Xuan Luo didn't expect Xiao Fang to be aggressive. She looked like a very weak girl.

"Haha. You can't tell good from bad!" After the slap, Li Shao Miao had a devilish grin on his face. "You can't tell what's good and bad. I'm now part of Shen Tui Men. I follow the eldest dang jia and I can get anything I want. I want you, that is your luck. I'll tell you the truth. Dong Fang Yu has already been captured by our dang jia. Why are you still working for her? You might as well follow me!"

Xiao Fang looked absolutely disgusted at Li Shao Miao. But there wasn't anything she could do. Within these past two years, Shen Tui Men's reputation is well known amongst the villagers...and it was nothing good.

Originally, Xuan Luo was ready to rescue Xiao Fang. But hearing the news about Dong Fang Yu being captured, how could he not be anxious? Thinking back, if it weren't for Dong Fang Yu's appearance, he wouldn't have gotten out of danger at the time.

Xuan Luo rushes straight ahead and strikes Li Shao Miao, causing him to fly across the ground. Xiao Fang did not appear to be fazed by this. Her eyes were still filled with disgust as she remained in silence.

"You alright?" Xuan Luo asked.

"I'm okay. Where's Bai Tian?" Xiao Fang looked at Xuan Luo and seemed to burst with joy as she thought of Bai Tian.

Xuan Luo dreaded answering this question. He has no idea where Bai Tian is.

“Umm... Bai Tian... he is still learning martial arts at the Clan!” Xuan Luo foolishly responded.

“You dare to hit me? Shen Tui Men is going to help me get revenge!” Li Shao Miao pointed his finger at Xuan Luo. He flew in a rage out of humiliation.

Xuan Luo looked at Li Shao Mao and smiled. He lightly said, “Go and tell your family that my Stepfather’s restaurant is not something you can dip your fingers in. Since you guys took action, now you will have to deal with my rage!”

Although Xuan Luo’s voice was light, it was hidden with fury. Hearing this, Li Shao Miao’s face’s expression changed. The slap he had endured consisted of at least a hundred and twenty jin. Xuan Luo was definitely too strong for him. Li Shao Miao is too afraid to fight Xuan Luo one on one.

“Hmm! We’ll see who wins!” Li Shao Miao said in spite.

A wise man knows not to fight when the odds are against him. Li Shao Miao is clearly that kind of guy. If he didn’t have Shen Tui Men backing him up, he definitely wouldn’t be so fearless; openly creating problems in the village.

Honestly, Xuan Luo wasn’t planning to do anything to the Lee family. He

somewhat assumed that the Lee family had behind the scene supporters backing them up. Yet, it turns out that it's also related to Shen Tui Men. Not only that, Dong Fang Yu is in their hands as well...

Xuan Luo said goodbye to Xiao Fang and rushed home to drink with Guan Shan Jue.

Three jugs of wine isn't too much, but within a short time, both of them had finished. Xuan Luo didn't drink too much, Guan Shan Jue finished the majority of the wine...

Guan Shan Jue was drunk. The drunken Guan Shan Jue seemed to be mumbling something. But paying closer attention, Xuan Luo could hear "wu wu" (sobbing).

Seeing Guan Shan Jue like this, Xuan Luo's heart soured. These past two years must have been very difficult for him...

———

Xuan Luo jumped onto the roof and looked up at the night sky. He watched the stars twinkle all around him. Suddenly, his aura changed and he stated with determination, "Shen Tui Men... I'm going to get you back for all the pain you have caused us.. both new and old."

The corners of Xuan Luo's eyes revealed darkness that has never been seen before...

## Chapter 43 Cha Lin

Note: The Cha Lin is where Dong Fang Yu and her business is located

It was night time and surprisingly quiet. After Guan Shan Jue fell asleep, Xuan Luo sneaked out of the room and headed to the Cha Lin to search for clues.

Ever since Xuan Luo found out from Li Shao Miao that Dong Fang Yu had been captured by Shang Hua, his heart could not remain calm. Shen Tui Men's appearance has definitely created a lot of tension within Qian Deng Zhen. Their behaviour resembled thieves, and it was something Xuan Luo could not endure. As martial artists, they aim to bring peace and justice to the world.

Seeing this, how could Xuan Luo restrain himself? Most importantly, Shen Tui Men has caused harm to the closest person to him.

Although Shen Tui Men has established themselves in Qian Deng Zhen for two years, no one truly knows where their headquarter is. Qian Deng Zhen is surrounded by mountains and forests, hence, there are a lot of areas that hasn't been touched or developed yet. In the past, due to Cha Lin watching over the village, Shen Tui Men never really made any drastic moves. It wasn't until recently that they revealed their wolf-like greed to swallow the whole village...

Cha Lin is not located in a very concealed area. After all, Dong Fang Yu's business is legitimate and follows the standards. There is no sketchy or

unlawful behaviour. In fact, Cha Lin is a very profitable business. The amount of money they generate isn't something that an average person could picture. Plus, Qian Deng Zhen's deng xin tea is famous in the whole empire.

Although Dong Fang Yu is a very powerful figure in Qian Deng Zhen, she has never done any terrible and evil things. It's not that she doesn't have the ability, it's because she doesn't want to use her powers as a base to harm people.

However, with the appearance of Shen Tui Men, this peace has been shattered. Dong Fang Yu and Shen Tui Men's eldest dang jia are constantly giving each other a hard time. After all, a mountain cannot allow two tigers. Obviously, Dong Fang Yu isn't going to let Shen Tui Men do whatever the hell they want within her territory. In addition, Shen Tui Men has already seriously disobeyed a lot of the rules. In order to become the master of the universe, they have done a lot of bad deeds and affected many people in a negative way.

Xuan Luo isn't familiar with Cha Lin, but through Xiao Fang, he managed to find out the approximate location of it. Actually, a lot of Guan Shan Jue's materials/food source comes from Cha Lin.

In the middle of the Cha Lin, there was a wooden plank that led to a house. The house was well lit and through the windows, a couple of shadows could be seen. It looked like a discussion of some sort.

Xuan Luo secretly proceeded and hid by the window. He poked a tiny hole through the paper window, and using his eyes, he scanned across the room. In the house, there were a total of four people; two females and two males. The guys looked big and bulky, while the women were as

beautiful as jades.

-----

“That asshole Shang Hua doesn’t know the difference between good and bad! First he tries to take over our area. Now, he directly captured Yu jie!” The person speaking sounded extremely furious.

Bang

Someone slammed the table and a voice could be heard, “That breast of a bear\*, he sure has a lot of guts! How dare he behave in such manner within our territory!”

[tl: \*Okay, I have no idea what “the breast of a bear” is supposed to be. I think it’s an insult? Perhaps it’s a way to make fun of a person in Chinese..I am translating literally.

Neji Note : its means a person put his chest front and boast about something. ]

“Yes, we really need to think of a solution!” A female voice broke out. As Xuan Luo listened from the outside, he was surprised. Through the woman’s voice, he could feel her wisdom. Although her voice sounded very strong, he could feel the fire within it -yet no anger could be detected. If one only judged based on the voice, most would assume it was someone of a high authority. But actually, that is not the case.

“Yu jie’s martial arts is something we have all seen before. Shang Hua is only a small character that has recently emerged. He thinks after learning

a couple of leg spells from Jun Zi Tang, he is now shen tui\*\*!?! Very funny!"

[tl: \*\*Shen Tui literally means godly leg. Omg, that sounds so weird in English. ]

"But how did he capture Yu jie? That's the question!" The female voice analysed. "Yu jie's martial arts hasn't deteriorated. In fact, she is stronger now! How could Shang Hua's abilities have improved so much within the past two years?"

"Shang Hua that asshole must have used some crafty trick." The two men looked at each other as one of them stated.

"I don't think so. If he had a trick, he wouldn't have waited so long before using it."

"True...why is he making a move now?" The two tall and husky men were confused.

Crack

Suddenly, Xuan Luo stepped on something and it made an obvious sound.

Everyone in the house were on alert and quickly grabbed their weapons and rushed to the door. "May I ask which mighty person is listening to us? Please state your name. If not, don't expect us to remain in place!"

Everywhere was quiet. It was so quiet that they could all hear each other breathing. Yet, no one appeared. Obviously, Xuan Luo wouldn't come out to get himself killed, right? Well, that's what's supposed to happen, but Xuan Luo actually came out of his hiding spot with a smile on his face.

"Hehe, sorry for disrupting you guys!" Xuan Luo appeared in front of them, wearing all black. Although he was sincere, he gave the group a very bad feeling. The four of them did not treat him like a kind visitor. What type of guy would sneak around wearing all black in the middle of the night? This guy must be a thief or a bad guy of some sort.

The four of them are experienced jiang hu people, they did not plan to go easy on Xuan Luo. All of them had their weapons and headed towards Xuan Luo.

Actually, the reason why Xuan Luo came out is simple. Since he had already exposed his tracks, even if he were to stay hidden, the four of them would be much more careful with their words. Who would be stupid enough to spill out their plans if they know someone was listening? Obviously they wouldn't. Until you know whether you're dealing with a friend or foe, nothing is going to happen.

"Did Shang Hua send you here?" The two men roughly asked.

"Of course not! I'm not from Shang Hua!? I came to find you guys. I apologize for listening to your conversation without permission." Xuan Luo sincerely apologized.



The four of them looked at each other, their eyes clearly showed they were unconvinced.

One of the men holding a big blade said with disdain, "Where are you from, you punk? You seriously think we believe your words? Take this!" And he swung his blade towards Xuan Luo.

Xuan Luo didn't expect the man to react this way. They had barely spoken, yet the guy was already taking action. Fortunately, he managed to awkwardly avoid the strike.

Another lady who hasn't spoken yet opened her mouth, "Wang Yuan, don't rush. This xiao xiong di is probably not a bad guy!"

Wang Yuan was stunned. He didn't expect his older sister to say that. Therefore, he reluctantly backed off.

"Da jie, we need to be careful. This is not something to be taken lightly!" Wang Yuan retorted.

However, Wang Yuan couldn't understand. Xuan Luo looked like a young punk with such a clear face. He's probably one of those rich little snobs. How good could his martial arts be? Plus, based on how awkwardly he avoided his strike, Xuan Luo clearly is no match for him.

"I can tell through his eyes he mean no harm. If not, once we had detected him, he could have escaped or attacked us!" The woman analyzed.

## Chapter 44 Discussion

Xuan Luo was about to explain, he didn't expect the lady to speak up and help him ease the situation. His impression of her increased on another level. Xuan Luo was curious about the lady who spoke up. Why is it that her words are able to control these angry looking men? They backed off immediately. But then again, it's none of his business. Currently, the most important thing is to find out the headquarter of Shen Tui Men and save Dong Fang Yu!

"Miss...can I ask you something?" Since Wang Yuan backed off, Xuan Luo looked at the woman who spoke up and asked with a smile on his face.

"I'm Dong Fang Xin. Dong Fang Yu is my older sister!"

Xuan Luo couldn't help but look foolishly at Dong Fang Xin. In his eyes, Dong Fang Yu is beautiful, but Dong Fang Yu is also gorgeous. However, their beauty is totally different. Although they are siblings, the two of them looked nothing alike.

"Oh, I see..." Xuan Luo thought to himself, "No wonder the lady's commands are so charming, and she has the ability to control these guys. Definitely not a simple\* person!"

[tl: \*It's translated as "simple" but it sounds so odd in English. Basically, it means she's not someone that can be judged based on appearance. She has a lot of background or information. She is a lot more complicated

than she appears to be. ]

"And you... sir?" Dong Fang Yu looked at the handsome young lad and asked out of curiosity.

Xuan Luo is my name. I've met your sister before!" As Xuan Luo spoke, his grin lingered on his face.

Dong Fang Xin consciously caught Xuan Luo's grin and began to feel relaxed. Xuan Luo's grin isn't something that anyone could reveal; it was a combination of rejoice, happiness and sweetness. Therefore, Dong Fan Xin's vigilance towards Xuan Luo was decreasing more and more.

"Xin jie, why are you..." The woman who was analysing earlier spoke up. Xuan Luo would describe her as wise and farsighted. From what he heard/saw earlier, she appears to be very articulate and careful.

Dong Fang Yu lifted her hand up to stop the girl from continuing her sentence. The other two big guys were also thinking of the same thing. But Dong Fang Yu ignored their questioning glances and continued talking cheerfully with Xuan Luo.

"So how do you think we can rescue my sister?" Dong Fang Yu asked. Deep down, she was smitten by Xuan Luo's attitude and good looks. How could she not continue a conversation with such an attractive guy? But Dong Fang Yu didn't consider other aspects aside from Xuan Luo's physical appearance; thus her mind is quite dirty.

Xuan Luo has no idea how to rescue a person. In his opinion, he just

hopes his martial arts is better than his opponents. When it comes to trickery or scheming, he is definitely an outsider. If Xuan Luo had already experienced all the worldly things, he probably wouldn't be out here right now.

When it comes to learning through experience, it isn't merely about the physical aspect. If you're in jiang hu and your life is like a blank piece of paper, then it's useless even if you have a strong body and good heart. Although, Xuan Luo's dream is really to protect his loved ones...

-----

"Actually, I think the da jie\*\* is quite right. Why don't we continue listening to her opinions?" Xuan Luo looked at the girl next to Dong Fang Xin. However, Xuan Luo shouldn't call the girl a "da jie". Based on appearance, the girl is approximately 16 years of age. She is around Xuan Luo's age, yet Xuan Luo called her a da jie. That is a huge mistake.

[tl: \*\*da jie means older sister. Usually, Chinese has the tendency to refer others as sisters, aunts, uncles, brothers even if they do not have any blood relations. "Da" means older/bigger. Usually, you only call someone a big sister if they are in fact a lot older than you. ]

"You little punk, who are you calling da jie?? I'm only 16 you dumbass!" The girl glared angrily at Xuan Luo.

"Cai Qin!" Dong Fang Xin yelled out her name, showing her displeasure.

Cai Qin is actually Dong Fang Yu's personal maid. But Dong Fang Yu has

never treated Cai Qin like a servant. Instead, she treated Cai Qin as if she was her sister. Therefore, Cai Qin is very obedient towards the both of them. However, she still has her temper.

*cough cough* Xuan Luo lightly coughed because he wanted to break the awkwardness. Basically, he has the tendency to call females da jie, aside from Ling Hu Jiu. Usually, that would be a great way to strike a conversation with the opposite sex. He didn't expect such a pretty lady to have such a fierce temper simply because he called her a "da jie".

"Don't take it to heart!" Dong Fang Xin felt bad and said apologetically to Xuan Luo.

"Haha. Of course.. If it weren't for your sister, I might not be here today.." Xuan Luo decided there's no point in hiding anything. Even if he doesn't tell them now, eventually, they will know.

"How can we save her though?" Xuan Luo asked.

"Yes, we need to think of a plan. But time is running out and I have no idea how my sister is doing right now!" Dong Fang Yu anxiously exclaimed. After finding out more about Xuan Luo, she basically trusts him completely; especially when she saw the expression on his face when he spoke of her sister.

"Please come in and we will have a discussion!" She gestured with her hand, and allowed Xuan Luo to go inside. Then, the rest of the group followed as well.

---

The sky is slowly turning white and the red daylight could be seen slowly raising. The blackness is slowly diminishing.

“Okay then. Later, we shall follow our plan that we created! Whether we can save my sister will depend on Xuan Yuan (his first name) the martial artist\*\*\*” All of them nodded after one another.

[tl: \*\*\*In this whole chapter, they keep talking in third person and keeps referring to Xuan Luo as少侠, which I do not know how to translate properly. It's not really a martial artist, but it's like a guy that does heroic stuff?? Omg, so confusing. (Btw, I tried avoiding the 3rd person as much as possible, because it sounds so weird in English) ]

Although they didn't sleep the entire night, the weariness did not appear on Xuan Luo's face. They mainly spent the night discussing a plan on rescuing Dong Fang Yu, but once in awhile, they would bring up some family issues. Hence, Xuan Luo has a greater understanding of the four now.

Wang Yuan was the guy who attempted to strike Xuan Luo. The other guy's name is Liu Hu, and both of them were hot blooded men. Although they weren't very strong, they are very loyal. As for Dong Fang Xin, Dong Fang Yu's sister, she is a very kind hearted lady but also very good at coming up with conspiracies. Lastly, the maid Cai Qin is extremely close to the Dong Fang sisters; she is also very good at analysing. Any time someone had trouble or was questioning the plan, Cai Qin would be able to explain the reasoning behind it.

Cai Qin's fighting abilities are not very high. But when the enemy approaches, she can save herself. She's like a trusted counselor of Cha Lin. All her experiences from working and dealing with the business has made her very wise.

One night was enough for Xuan Luo and the rest of them to get along. After all, they all have the same goal.

When enemies meet, sometimes they could become friends. Although Xuan Luo and these guys are not trying to use each other, in a way, they are somewhat trying to.

Shen Tui Men's behaviour truly turns up one's nose. But it can't be helped because their wings have gotten strong. Therefore, currently the most important thing is to bend the fully developed wing.

Xia Luo village, Guan Shan Jue were all affected by Shen Tui Men. When Dong Fang Xin was listening to Xuan Luo tell his story, the group were disgusted and angered.

Xuan Luo took a deep breath and looked up at the clear sky. He had a faraway look and his eyes grew serious.

"I will not allow you to harm my family and friends! Never!!" Xuan Luo stated with determination.

## Chapter 45 Came at them

"This is Shen Tui Men's headquarter." Dong Fang Xin pointed straight at a building.

Xuan Luo looked ahead and deeply murmured, "Shen Tui Men really knows how to pick their location."

This mountain god temple is located very close to Qian Deng Zhen. Perhaps Shen Tui Men is quite superstitious, therefore they chose this location as a foundation to their influential power. However, this mountain god temple looks very worn down. If a random person glances at it, he/she would probably assume it is an abandoned temple. Little do they know that it's a place where Shen Tui Men commits crime.

But compared to other places, this piece of land is very good. In fact, the construction of this building relies on the mountain; as if it is embedded in the mountain. Hence, it is very difficult to attack and easy to protect.

Subconsciously, Xuan Luo's eyes grew hard. This is the first time he has experienced something like this.

"Don't underestimate this worn out looking temple, this is just a leading sign. Based on our findings, the residence should be inside. It is definitely not smaller than a small palace." As Dong Fang Xin explained, her loathing expression completely appeared on her face.



Xuan Luo don't have many people with him. It was only the four from Dong Fang Xin's group and himself.

But that doesn't matter because more people doesn't necessarily mean success.

Xuan Luo and the group carefully proceeded forward, but realized that there weren't a single person guarding from the outside. It just looked like a worn abandoned temple.

Xuan Luo is on his highest alert as he looked around his surroundings. His mind is spinning very fast. If they were to fail their mission, how would they escape?

As they entered the mountain god temple, there was nothing special about it. Everywhere was covered in thick dust, and it didn't seem like a place where people actually stayed.

Xuan Luo crinkled his brows and asked hesitantly, "This is really Shen Tui Men?"

Xuan Luo's question also caused Dong Fang Xin to frown. Her voice no longer sounded as sure, "That's what our researchers have told us. Perhaps there is a secret entrance?"

"Yes. From what I know, this temple is just a sign. That's how Shen Tui Men can hide from people's sight!" Cai Qin finally spoke up.

Cai Qin started to pace back and forth in the temple. She was carefully

looking around and started tapping on the walls and ground.

Suddenly, Xuan Luo felt the ground tremble.

### *Ground shaking sounds*

The dust from the ground flew up, and revealed a hidden tunnel.

"This tunnel will probably lead us to the headquarters." Cai Qin stated.

"Then what are we waiting for? Let's hurry!" As Wang Yuan watched, the blood running through his veins have already been accelerated by this situation. "As one approaches, I shall kill one. Two approaches, I shall kill two. No hesitation! We will rush down and overtake Shang Hua!"

Wang Yuan sounded extremely aggressive in his speech. He also stated the most important goal for them. However, they're unsure if there are hidden traps within the tunnel.

Hearing Wang Yuan's aggressive tone, Dong Fang Xin's eyes showed a smear of anxiety. She didn't move, but remained standing in front of the tunnel with a troublesome expression.

"Let's go. If there are traps, they would all have to go through it as well. So it should just be a simple tunnel." Xuan Luo voiced out.

Actually, Xuan Luo has his own thoughts. If there really was a trap in the tunnel, then there would be many people gathering around the temple\*

Since Shen Tui Men chose the mountain god temple as their base, they would definitely not leave it unused. If there is no one in the temple, all of them must be at the headquarters.

[tl: \*I don't get it. Neji note : its a facade (Source URL: a deceptive outward appearance.) ]

Don't forget. Shang Hua recently captured Dong Fang Yu. Would he really not expect people from Cha Lin to save her?? Of course not.\*\*

[tl: \*\*I am super confused right now. I don't know what the author is trying to say. Perhaps everyone went to the headquarters to hide from the people from Cha Lin?? If you're confused as well, I'm sorry.

Neji Note : its a simple tactic, to get both the prey and the hunter under one roof, and deal them in one sweep. ]

Xuan Luo enters the tunnel, but deep down, he is unsure.

-----

After some time later, Xuan Luo exited the tunnel and was totally toppled by the sight in front of him. Outside of the tunnel was a huge building. There was a big open space and residential areas. It was much more extravagant compared to the buildings he has seen from the outside. The view was definitely extraordinary. Plus, this was within a mountain!

"Wow, Shen Tui Men really knows how to pick their location." Dong Fang Xin couldn't help but praise.

"Be careful. I can already see their people." Xuan Luo fixedly stares ahead and could see that there was a group of people that were split into smaller teams patrolling along.

"Humpt! Those dogs! You guys better hurry and wash your neck! I'm coming to get you!!" Wang Yuan's behaviour is truly causing Xuan Luo's heart to pound. Xuan Luo is sweating. Is Wang Yuan always like this? But then again, since they are here to cause damage and save Dong Fang Yu, there isn't a need to be polite or whatnot.

Hearing Wang Yuan's shouting, Dong Fang Xin was frustrated, "Wang Yuan. What the hell are you doing? Do you really want to hit the grass to wake the snake?"

But words spoken is like pouring water out. There is no turning back. Currently, the best solution is to directly attack head on. They need to get to the main guy.

"Everyone, stay alert! We have enemies!" Out of nowhere, someone hollered. Then, about a hundred Shen Tui Men people appeared before their eyes. However, Shang Hua is still nowhere to be seen.

"Humpt! I'm gonna flatten you all!" Wang Yuan lifted his blade and stated, "My blade has been thirsty for far too long!"

"Let's go. They have created so much evil. They deserve to die!" Dong Fang Xin rushes to the crowd with her double sword; she was constantly changing her style (movement).

Obviously, Xuan Luo wasn't just watching...

People screaming in pain, sounds of weapons clashing could all be heard everywhere.

Within a short period of time, all five of them were covered in fresh blood.

However, the blood did not belong to them. It was the blood of Shen Tui Men's people. On the ground were many who were injured or dead. There were only a few of them left.

"Go....hurry...hurry and find the Clan master..." Seeing how strong and deadly Xuan Luo and the group were, a disciple from Shen Tui Men instructed another disciple.

-----

"Clan master...we have a disaster...Clan master!!!!....Cha...the people from Cha Lin are here....." The voice trembled with fear, but it was clearly heard.

## Chapter 46 Hu Han

From all the chaos, out came a person with a huge blade on his shoulder. That person was Hu Han. However, the moment Xuan Luo saw him, he felt like Hu Han went through a transformation of some sort.

Since the main boss came out, the disciples from Shen Tui Men stopped fighting. They knew they were no match for Xuan Luo and his group. All of them were scared to die; especially since Wang Yuan fought with no mercy – he literally chopped anyone in sight. He had no regulations.

However, because Wang Yuan is the way he is, his presence alone was able to push down the enemy.

“Hu Han?” Xuan Luo faintly squinted his eyes. As Xuan Luo looked at him, he wasn’t quite sure.

Dong Fang Xin and the rest of the group were taken aback by Xuan Luo’s gesture, but they didn’t ask questions.

“It’s you?” Hu Han was in shock as he looked at Xuan Luo. Xuan Luo has grown up quite a bit during the past two years. But seeing Xuan Luo in front of him was unfathomable.

“Haha, today we shall deal with both our old and new hatred\*!” Xuan Luo’s eyes harden as he clenched his fists.

Dong Fang Xin looked at Hu Han and immediately scowled, "Where is my sister?"

Hu Han only gave Dong Fang Xin a sideways glance; his eyes showed disdain.

The moment Xuan Luo saw Hu Han, he noticed Hu Han's aura has changed. Two years ago, he wasn't familiar with this type of feeling. But now, he can definitely sense a dangerous aura leaking out from Hu Han.

This definitely wasn't there before.

"Let's see whether you have that ability!" Hu Han loudly yelled as he swiftly took out his blade and headed directly at Dong Fang Xin.

The move was so fast that Xuan Luo couldn't even see it clearly. By the time he reacted to it, there was already a deep cut that has appeared on Dong Fang Xin's body. Fresh blood was spewing out.

Xuan Luo didn't know the name of the guy from Xia Luo village. He only knows that the man was Shen Tui Men's second dang jia. While he was fighting the guy, Xuan Luo gave it his all. Although his tai chi fist is at "success", it's still not to the point where he could face weapons using only his hands without being harmed.\*\*

However, Xuan Luo's coping abilities have dramatically improved.

"Xin jie!" At once, Wang Yuan and Cai Qin's eyes were filled with tears as they looked at their injured sister. Wang Yuan's eyes became scarlet as

he charged at Hu Han.

Wang Yuan swung his blade very quickly, but Hu Han had no trouble blocking. It did not appear to affect him at all.

Hu Han had both his hand on his blade as he shook it. The vibration caused Wang Yuan's blade to fall.

Seeing this, Xuan Luo knows the current Hu Han's potential is certainly incomparable compared to the past Hu Han. Xuan Luo was curious. How could Hu Han have improved so drastically within two short years? Could it be talent? No, that's not possible. If Hu Han had talent, he wouldn't have been defeated by Xuan Luo during his mid thirties. There must be a hidden story behind this.

Hu Han looked at Wang Yuan and conveniently looked at the rest of the group as well. A cruel smile formed around his mouth; a smile that caused Xuan Luo's pores to shut down\*\*\*.

It was at this moment that Xuan Luo had came to the realization -at their current state, no one was a match for Hu Han; at least, not from their group.

Immense pressure is now pushing down on Xuan Luo. He totally didn't and couldn't understand how Hu Han had improved so much so suddenly.

Currently, Shang Hua has yet to appear and they still have to save Dong Fang Yu. Not to mention, Xuan Luo also wanted to get rid of Shen Tui Men



once and for all.

Xuan Luo has so many issues with Shen Tui Men, and when you hit a snake, you have to hit all seven inches. If you're getting rid of grass, you have to pull the weed out. Xuan Luo knows that this is a "You die I live" situation. There can only be one winner. If not, it will cause no end of trouble.

If they are able to extinguish Shen Tui Men during this operation, then Cha Lin will have pulled out their roots from Qian Deng Zhen. If other influential powers wanted to intrude, they will have to think twice.

But a person with true powers wouldn't want a small place such as Qian Deng Zhen. Although the profits from Cha Lin is nice, but which true influential power doesn't have their own industry?

No one from Wang Yuan's group has fought face to face with Hu Han, but they are already forced to retreat. Xuan Luo knows their abilities. Out of the four, Wang Yuan is the strongest. However, Wang Yuan only uses brute strength and lacks skills; that is his biggest flaw.

Tian Yu Zi's theory includes learning the style to the point of perfection. Under that circumstance, the moment you react, you'll be able to create damage. In addition, your heart will dictate your hands. It's automatic when it comes to the heart. Also, you need to be quick. As long as you're faster than your opponent, you will have an advantage. Then, using your flexible style, you can quickly control your opponent.

"It's your turn!" Hu Han loudly hollered.

“Ha!” Hu Han lifted his blade and charged at Xuan Luo; about to chop him.

The blade flashes in front of Xuan Luo and there is a *whoosh* sound that passes by his ears. Hastily, Xuan Luo changes the position of his right foot, while his left foot lightly faces forward; he stooped over and managed to avoid the strike ever so slightly.

Although Hu Han’s blade is huge, it is also ridiculously heavy. Thus, the amount of strength it holds is enormous.

As Xuan Luo turns his body, he tries to push the blade away by using his hands to push the handle of the blade. However, it was no use.

Xuan Luo couldn’t think of any other tactics under this situation. Right now, he can only gamble. There must be a secret to why Hu Han’s skills have improved so drastically. Xuan Luo has an idea, therefore, he decided he needed more time to find the hole\*\*\*\*.

Hu Hun’s attack was only increasing. In addition, he was getting faster and faster. Although the blade was over a hundred jin, Hu Han didn’t even break a sweat as he swung it.

Xuan Luo was getting very exhausted, but he was still calm and trying to find the hole.

Suddenly, Xuan Luo seemed to see something, and his eyes lit up.

It’s right now!

Xuan Luo's heart bellowed. Just right now, Hu Han's attack has increased substantially. But that is just at the beginning, afterwards it would slow down.

Bang!

Xuan Luo's punch landed on Hu Han's face. Immediately, the impact caused Hu Han to fly with his blade.

\*This sounds so awkward...I would say problems, but it's not problems. It is hatred in Chinese, but it doesn't sound right in English.

\*\*This paragraph came from nowhere... I don't know why the author is talking about the other guy when we are dealing with Hu Han right now. Ughh

\*\*\*Please don't take it literally.

\*\*\*\*hole as in, a flaw that he could break through.

## Chapter 47 An unexpected change

Just as Xuan Luo was about to brutally pounce on Hu Han, Dong Fang Xin let out a yell and stopped him in his tracks.

“Wait! Don’t take his life temporarily!” Dong Fang Xin anxiously called out. Her voice was evidently weak. It was obvious that the statement consisted of all her strength.

Earlier, Dong Fang Xin wasn’t careful, therefore she was wounded by Hu Han. Currently, her situation isn’t looking very optimistic. Xuan Luo didn’t know what to do in order to help cure her. Honestly, Dong Fang Xin is overly worried. She mistaken and thought Xuan Luo was about to kill Hu Han. If that is the case, they wouldn’t be able to find out the whereabouts of Dong Fang Yu.

Xuan Luo didn’t think much and directly headed towards Dong Fang Xin. Seeing Dong Fang Xin covered in fresh blood, Xuan Luo felt extremely guilty. If he was able to do something earlier...then Dong Fang Xin wouldn’t be injured right now.

“Where ..is my...sister?” Dong Fang Xin weakly questioned. Yet, she was still forcing herself to stand as she fixedly stared at Hu Han.

“Hummp! If you want to kill, then kill. Why say so much?” Hu Han didn’t give a shit.

Wang Yuan was furious at Hu Han because he injured Dong Fang Xin. If

not, he wouldn't have charged at Hu Han without a thought. Sadly, his abilities are no match for Hu Han. During their short match, Wang Yuan wasn't able to touch any part of Hu Han, and his blade was shook off due to the vibration of Hu Han's blade.

In reality, Wang Yuan likes Dong Fang Xin\*; she is petite and cute. Dong Fang Xin knows as well, but she has never directly acknowledged it. Initially, Xuan Luo thought Wang Yuan treated Dong Fang Xin like a younger sister. But now, he can clearly see the distress in Wang Yuan's eyes...

It's actually very obvious to anyone who pays attention. Xuan Luo doesn't know why Wang Yuan hasn't confess to Dong Fang Xin...perhaps he doesn't know how.

Seeing how weak Dong Fang Xin was, Wang Yuan rushed towards her to lend an arm. Although he is also injured, his injuries are not too serious.

"Hurry and tell me where my sister is!" Dong Fang Xin's voice was becoming more feeble. However, the anguish could still be heard.

"Haha! You think I'm going to tell you?! Go find out yourself!" Hu Han laughed menacingly. As he looked at Dong Fang Xin and the others, his eyes only showed contempt.

But to Xuan Luo, questioning with torture is definitely not an issue. Don't judge him based on his appearance. In reality, Xuan Luo is actually quite vulgar. If not, he wouldn't be so close to Bai Tian!

"You won't say? Fine!" Xuan Luo let out a treacherous smile as he turned to Wang Yuan, "Do you have \_\_\_\_\_?"

Wang Yuan stared blankly at Xuan Luo, while Dong Fang Xin and Cai Qin blushed; they looked very embarrassed as they stared down.

Hu Han looked hesitantly at Xuan Luo; wondering what on earth Xuan Luo was thinking. But based on Xuan Luo's expression, he started to feel a deep sense of dread.

"You pervert!" Cai Qin glared at Xuan Luo. She said nothing else.

Xuan Luo looked at the big bulky Wang Yuan. How could a man not carry that type of "good medicine" with him on a trip? He wanted to look down on him.

"You, come here!" Xuan Luo randomly pointed his finger and called one of the Shen Tui Men's disciples over.

The disciple's legs started to shiver. If the third dang jia cannot beat Xuan Luo, then he has no chance.

"Da...da....ye\*\*...you...call..call the little me???" The disciple is stuttering and shaking. He is worried Xuan Luo is going to snap him in half.

"Do you have \_\_\_\_\_?" Xuan Luo asked.

"Yes...yes... we have something called "thick and solid king". You could

be in a battle three hundred times within one night, and still have no issues!" Suddenly, the guy took out a package of white powder, which was \_\_\_\_.

"What the heck are you doing? Just destroy him! Why are you putting so much effort into this?" Dong Fang Xin's situation was slowly deteriorating and Wang Yuan didn't want to waste any more time.

"Wang xiong, if he refuses to speak. You think beating him will be effective?" Xuan Luo refuted. "My method works. Trust me. I've tried it many times before."

"In the past, I've tried this with my sidekick. We gave a dog some of \_\_\_\_ and placed him in a cow shed. Guess what happened?" Xuan Luo smirked.

Hearing this, Hu Han started to break out in cold sweats. He squealed, "If you have guts, you will kill me! I will never tell!"

"Okay...!? Then don't tell! I'll just pretend you're the dog!?" Xuan Luo slowly approached Hu Han, as he held the \_\_\_\_ in his hands. He let out a sinister laugh.

"Don't..don't come near me!" Hu Han didn't dare to think about the possible outcome. This is not just about "face", who knows what this dirty minded Xuan Luo is going to do.

"Are you going to tell???"

"No! Even if you kill me, I won't tell..." Hu Han didn't dare to look at Xuan Luo's eyes.

"Fine..." Xuan Luo made an expression as if he was opening the \_\_\_\_\_, and directly placed in front of Hu Han.

Seeing this, how could Hu Han handle it? Xuan Luo truly knows how to play mind games.

"No....I'll say. I'll say everything..!!!" Hu Han wailed.

It turns out that Hu Han's abilities were not high to begin with. Shen Tui Men was formed two years ago by him, Shang Hua, and Gou Tian Hu. Originally, they didn't know each other. However, when they encountered each other in jiang hu, Shang Hua suggested that they create Shen Tui Men together. Their target was Qian Deng Zhen.

Shang Hua was formally a disciple of Jun Zi Tang, but his abilities were far too inferior. He had some background in leg techniques and thought he could fly\*\*\*.

According to Hu Han, there is also another person behind Shang Hua. However, he doesn't know who that is.

As for how Hu Han became so much stronger, Shang Hua taught him a secret spell. The secret spell was able to arouse his whole body's potential within a short period of time. Although his abilities has increased dramatically, there were also side effects. Hu Han had personally experienced it as well. The body would suddenly become limp



and powerless, and at that moment, basically the person would be like a fish that was being slaughtered.

Currently, Shang Hua is hiding somewhere secretive to cultivate. As for Dong Fang Yu, Hu Han didn't mention. It's not because he didn't want to tell, but he actually has no idea.

"Where is Shang Hua now?" Xuan Luo asked coldly. Hu Han has spoken enough, but didn't get to the most important point.

At that moment, a dart flew from the sky and directly stabbed into the middle of Hu Han's brows.

\*Note: Even though Wang Yuan calls Dong Fang Xin "sister", they are not actually blood related. It's very common in the Chinese culture for people to call each other brothers, sisters, aunts and uncles even if there are no blood relations.

\*\* Da means big, ye means grandfather or boss (depending on how you use it). So he's calling Xuan Luo "big boss"

\*\*\* not fly literally. But more like he thinks he is unstoppable.

## Chapter 48 Hu Han is dead

A small blood hole appeared in between Hu Han's brows. Xuan Luo immediately stood up and tried to locate the direction of the dart.

However, the sky was clear and not a movement could be detected.

"What did you just see?" Xuan Luo asked Wang Yuan, who was at the closest distance to him. Everything happened so quickly, but some grass must have felt the wind!

"What!?" Wang Yuan was confused and had no idea what Xuan Luo was talking about. He was surprised and curious as to why Xuan Luo seemed so stirred up.

As Xuan Luo looked at Wang Yuan, he turned to Cai Qin and Dong Fang Xin as well; all of them had bleak expressions on their faces. They looked at Xuan Luo awkwardly.

"What's wrong?" Cai Qin has high IQ and knows Xuan Luo's behaviour wasn't normal. Something must have happened.

"Hu Han is dead!" Xuan Luo replied quietly.

"WHAT?!?!" Xuan Luo's statement was like a shocking lightning to them. It had a direct impact on Cai Qin and the rest of the group.

Seeing their shocked expressions, Xuan Luo pointed his finger towards Hu Han, whose eyes had rolled backwards and only whiteness could be seen.

They stared at Hu Han in astonishment as they felt cold sweat running down their bodies. Wang Yuan stuttered, "What....what happened???"

Xuan Luo replied, "Just now a dart flew from the air and directly stabbed him in between his brows!"

Xuan Luo sighed. The hidden story has began to faintly appear. The most important part is that dart appeared while he had no guard on. He was only a step away from Hu Han. He could have easily been the one who died.

Xuan Luo felt lucky, but when he thought about it again, he was terrified.

"Looks like someone didn't want him to explain the whole story!" Cai Qin analyzed. Sadly, they still have no idea where Dong Fang Yu is. Their goal was supposed to saved Dong Fang Yu!!

However, Xuan Luo had another motive as well. The incident that occurred in Xia Luo Village enraged him. Shen Tui Men's behaviour was unacceptable and caused him to explode. If he cannot even protect the ones around him, then what was the purpose of learning martial arts?

"But we still don't know where my sister is!" Dong Fang Xin started to

freak out.

"If you don't deal with your injury, you will die!" Wang Yuan was also freaking out, but he was concerned about Dong Fang Xin. Although her injuries weren't deadly, if they don't hurry to clear the wound, it might split apart and start bleeding again.

"Yes, Miss Dong Fang, if the mountain is here, we don't have to worry that there won't be any firewood. You're injured right now. At this rate, you won't be able to find your sister. Protect your own health first." Seeing this situation, Xuan Luo rushed.

----

Since everyone kept persuading her, Dong Fang Xin decided to stop asking. As for the disciples from Shen Tui Men, their hearts were all over the place\*. Since both their dang jias were dead, and Shang Hua never showed up, how could their hearts stay intact and work together? Right now, they're a group without an owner.

Also, most of the disciples from Shen Tui Men were originally a bunch of losers that were roaming around the streets. Initially, they thought that Shen Tui Men will give them the luxurious life. But who knew this influential power would be destroyed within a matter of days?

The group from Cha Lin didn't really care about the rest of them. The ones who should have died are dead. Right now, they just want Shang Hua.

Based on what Hu Han said, Shang Hua is currently hiding in a mysterious place. However, it seems like Hu Han didn't know where exactly Shang Hua was either. Therefore, the rest of the disciples probably have no idea as well.

As for Dong Fang Yu, they have no idea. Since Shang Hua was the one who took Dong Fang Yu, without him, there is no news.

However, Xuan Luo could understand the anguish Dong Fang Xin was experiencing. It was like how he felt about Bai Tian when Bai Tian went missing. But in his mind, he figured Bai Tian would be ok since he was a big boy. Plus, he had given Bai Tian the fist technique book from Master Li. Based on Bai Tian's talents, he should be able to cultivate and save himself if something were to happen.

Seeing Dong Fang Xin like this, Xuan Luo couldn't help but think of Bai Tian again.

-----

It was like a regular day at Cha Lin. Xuan Luo is standing by the window as he looked up at the white clouds in the sky. There was sadness in his eyes as he lightly whispered, "Bai Tian, are you ok?"

Creak. Someone pushed Xuan Luo's door open. Xuan Luo turned and saw Wang Yuan entering.

"How's Miss Dong Fang's injuries? Is she doing better?" Xuan Luo asked.

"She's a lot better. By the way, I wanted to apologize for my actions from before." Although Wang Yuan could be tiger minded\*\* at times, he was still a good natured guy. Although they had some issues from before, Xuan Luo still had positive feelings towards him.

"Haha. Wang da ge, don't worry about it. Miss Dong Fang Yu has saved me before. Also, Shen Tui Men's actions are despicable. I just happened to join you guys." Xuan Luo smiled. Suddenly, he turned his whole body around and asked, "Oh yeah! Wang da ge, seeing you like this.... you must like Miss Dong Fang, huh?!"

Wang Yuan immediately felt embarrassed and shook his head. He didn't know what to say, so he just laughed.

"Wang da ge, although I have never experienced this type of stuff before, I can see how much you care about Miss Dong Fang from the way you look at her. It's so obvious!! Don't miss out on any opportunities!!" Xuan Luo is being nosy again. Instead of worrying about himself, he is being nosy like Bai Tian and caring about other people's businesses.

"Haha. Bring me to Miss Dong Fang! You guys join me as well. I have something I need to say." Xuan Luo decided. He actually has a task to deal with... sigh. If it weren't for the battle between Chun Yang Palace and Zi Yang Palace, he probably would be in Wu Dang Mountains practicing martial arts right now!

But first of all, he needs to make sure he arranges things for Guan Shan Jue. Guan Shan Jue is old and frail. Although he has a good temper, he can't deal with all these little things. Plus, he is an easy target. If not, why would the Lee family first attack his business when they joined Shen Tui Men?

"Miss Dong Fang, how are your injuries?" Xuan Luo politely asked as he arrived at the main hall. Dong Fang Xin was wrapped around in bandages.

"Haha. Thank you gong zi. My injuries are fine... except..." The tone of Dong Fang Xin's voice sounded bad. Xuan Luo knew it's because they haven't found Dong Fang Yu yet.

"Heaven helps the worthy. I am sure Dong Fang jie jie is okay. Just try to rest and heal up. I will try to find your sister." Xuan Luo consoled.

"Thank you, gong zi!"

"Miss Dong Fang, can I ask you for something?" After thinking about it for awhile, Xuan Luo finally decided to ask.

"Go ahead, gong zi." Dong Fang Xin could tell Xuan Luo was a bit nervous, thus she nicely smiled to show encouragement.

Xuan Luo told her it's about Guan Shan Jue. Now that Shen Tui Men is practically destroyed, he wasn't worried about them anymore.

"Haha, gong zi's stepfather! Of course I will help you take care of him!" Dong Fang Xin thought it was some type of big issue, but turns out it was only about taking care of Guan Shan Jue. She promised right away. Plus,

Guan Shan Jue's business also did business with Cha Lin.

"Thank you so much!" Xuan Luo felt at ease with Dong Fang Xin's words.

"No problem. Since gong zi has to go to Du Cheng, please try to find out more information about my sister along your way. If you find anything, please contact me immediately!" Dong Fang Xin's concern has never decreased. Since she cannot go off and look for her sister on her own at the moment, she can only ask Xuan Luo.

\*Don't take it literally

\*\* I don't know what tiger minded means. I translated it literally. Haha



## Chapter 49 Hu Wei Biao Ju

Note: Biao ju is a store that helps deliver people's valuables safe for a price. People will come redeem their items after.

After dealing with everything, Xuan Luo didn't return to Qian Deng Zhen. One of the things he despised most was saying goodbye. Most of all, he didn't want Guan Shan Jue to witness his tearful face.

As one gets older, he/she will feel more lonely. During these past two years, Xuan Luo knows how painful it is to miss someone. Although he really wanted to be by his stepfather's side, currently, that wasn't an option.

When he left home with Bai Tian, he could only imagine Guan Shan Jue's emotions. His stepfather took care of him for five years, and definitely invested a lot in him. Likewise, he also loved Guan Shan Jue very much.

Nowadays, his nightmares are happening less and less. However, they were getting clearer and clearer. Xuan Luo knows that his dream has something to do with his past. Each time he has that dream, he would feel very frightened and he would be drenched in cold sweats. From time to time, he would wake up scared.

His dream has been slowly unfolding in his eyes. However, there were still a lot of blank moments. He only knows there was definitely a fire

involved. Everything else, he wasn't sure.

Xuan Luo didn't know what happened in between. He wonders when the dream will totally reveal itself.

Before arriving at Du Cheng, Xuan Luo went back to Xia Luo village to check up on Hu Zi. Hu Zi looked a lot better compared to before; however, when Xuan Luo asked him about his plans for the future, Hu Zi didn't say anything. Xuan Luo feels hopeless because he knows Hu Zi's mother's death was very traumatic to him.

After dropping by the village, Xuan Luo headed to Du Cheng on his own to meet up with Tang Chen and Xuan Yuan Duan Ai. They had decided to meet at Hu Wei biao ju. It has been days since then. Xuan Luo wasn't sure if the issue has already been dealt with. Or perhaps, they haven't even began.

———

Du Cheng looked extravagant as usual. The soldiers in the city gate were roaming about like always. People came and left. As Xuan Luo watched, he couldn't help but think back to the incident with Shen Tui Men. Jiang Hu is honestly a very difficult place to live/mingle. Oftentimes, a lot of unpleasant things can happen. For instance, Qian Deng Zhen is pretty much away from everything, yet there were still people like Shen Tui Men who appeared and tried to take over. A big city like Du Cheng would certainly have many more conflicts and issues.

Xuan Luo sighed. He knows Shen Tui Men was merely a corner of the frozen mountain (metaphor).

In the past, when Xuan Luo first arrived at Du Cheng, he had heard about Hu Wei biao ju. However, he wasn't aware of the exact location of it. Fortunately, as long as there are people around, the path wouldn't be difficult to find. Thus, the moment he arrived at Du Cheng, he started to seek out people to ask for directions.

"Excuse me, Miss. Could you tell me how to get to Hu Wei biao ju?" Xuan Luo released his sunshine smile at the lady in front of him.

The lady was in her teens, and had an egg liked round face. Her eyes looked like black pearls and her cheeks were blushed. She wore a pink outfit and had a rather attractive body\*. That's the reason why Xuan Luo specifically chose to ask her.

After all, pretty women can cause the heart to crack. As one is getting directions, he could also nourish his eyes and get closer. Of course, that's what Bai Tian would think. Xuan Luo is actually quite honest\*\*.

The girl looked at Xuan Luo and didn't say a word. She immediately dropped her item and ran off.

Seeing this, Xuan Luo was amused. He said to himself, "Could it be that I'm too ugly?"

Xuan Luo didn't know why she acted this way, and he also didn't want to think about it. He quickly disregarded his previous thought.

Within no time, he found out the location of Hu Wei biao ju.

Hu Wei biao ju is one of the most well known biao ju of Du Cheng. There are four big biao ju from various cities, and Hu Wei represented Du Cheng. Therefore, Hu Wei biao ju must have a lot of insiders' information. However, that is based on what the commoners say. For martial artists, aside from practicing daily, they only care about achieving dao. They want to achieve the peak of wu dao.

Outside of Hu Wei biao ju stood two huge stone lions. Since they were placed right at the entrance, it gave the biao ju a very powerful and intimidating aura. The biao ju stood on over a dozen fields\*\*\*. It was quite gigantic.

As Xuan Luo got closer, he noticed that there weren't anyone patrolling around the entrance. He was surprised because in Wu Dang, there were always disciples patrolling around the mountains. Thus, there should also be people patrolling around the biao ju, right?

Since no one was outside, Xuan Luo walked in like it was no big deal. However, no one was inside. Xuan Luo wasn't sure what he should do.

Then someone came out from a room.

"Xuan Luo, you're finally here!" That person was Tang Chen. Tang Chen's forehead eases now that Xuan Luo has arrived.

Xuan Luo noticed this reaction and commented, "Tang da ge, what happened? Why do you look so stressed?"

Tang Chen smiled awkwardly and said, "Come in first and I'll get into the details."

"Duan Ai xiong!" Once Xuan Luo entered, he called out. However, Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was deep in thought and clearly didn't hear him.

Thus, Xuan Luo went up to Xuan Yuan Duan Ai's ear and loudly yelled, "Duan Ai xiong!! Xiong! Xiong!!!!"

Xuan Luo's voice caused Xuan Yuan Duan Ai to quiver and jump up. He angrily yelled, "What the hell!?!"

Xuan Luo has never seen Xuan Yuan Duan Ai so worked up and was extremely delighted. He teased, "Duan Ai xiong, what are you thinking about? You were so deep in thought! I called you a couple of times! Are you thinking of your woman?!"

"Get lost! How is that possible?" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai cuts Xuan Luo off and glares at him. "Zhao biao tou has been kidnapped! As of right now, we don't know who did it. Currently, the nan gong family is under the highest suspicion. However, we don't have any evidence. Also, we're unsure if someone is trying to frame them."

Therefore, Xuan Yuan Duai Ai and Tang Chen were very frustrated because of this. Xuan Luo just realized how serious this situation was. He instantly stopped being silly and gravely asked, "What exactly happened?"

\*ass and butt were sticking out at the right places.

\*\*honest as in he doesn't have ulterior motives (but didn't he choose her specifically based on her appearance? -\_\_\_\_-)

\*\*\*it's translated as fields but it's also a unit of area equal to 1/15 of a hectare

This is what delivering the “biao” looked like in the past. “Biao” are the items that the biao ju is ordered to deliver/keep safe for a price. Basically, it’s like sending express mail with bodyguards.



## Chapter 50 Analyzing

By the time Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen finished telling Xuan Luo the whole story, a couple of hours had already gone by. Xuan Yuan Duan Ai was very detailed; he didn't leave out a single detail. Xuan Luo vaguely sensed a conspiracy was going on.

"There is something fishy about this." Honestly, Xuan Luo didn't have to meddle in this muddy water. However, since he had arrived in Du Cheng, his heart felt very troubled. Yet, he couldn't really explain why. Perhaps the incident with Shen Tui Men has caused him to over think.

"I think so too! That day, I was told to protect the items on the carts and to bring it to the Nan gong family's residence. The client had already put down a deposit, and the deposit was no less than twenty thousand silver tael (currency from the Qing Dynasty). I didn't think anyone would be so generous!" Xuan Yuan Duan Ai exclaimed.

"We truly need to deeply analyze this situation." Xuan Luo repeated again. He has no idea what he was getting into.

"Let's analyze." Tang Chen said calmly. He also has strong feelings about this; because why on earth would the client asked the biao ju to deliver\* a bunch of gunpowder? Not to mention, the Nan gong family definitely has enough potential without the help of the biao ju.

"The client wanted us to escort the carts of gunpowder, but he/they



didn't want us to know about it. The carts were prepared ahead of time, and we were only told to deliver them." As Tang Chen analyzed, he used tea cups to represent the different people.

As he was analyzing, Xuan Luo and Xuan Yuan Duan Ai stood by his side and chirped in extra details he may have missed.

Not only is Tang Chen talented in martial arts, he is also very good at analyzing and reasoning.

"There is definitely something fishy going on. Huge deposit, took the responsibility of putting in the items on their own, and then handing it to us. It's as if everything was planned."

"Yes, your conclusion makes a lot of sense." Xuan Luo nodded. Then he pointed to the cup on the table and said, "I agree with what Tang da ge said. I think someone purposely used a psychological method to get Zhao biao tou to take this task. Not only that, the person also wanted to use Hu Wei biao ju's well known reputation."

As Xuan Luo spoke, he looked at the cup that represented the client, "Zhao biao tou was forced to take this task. If he refused, he would be looked down upon by the people in his field. Since his biao ju is already so big, he definitely wouldn't care about all the little stuff. It's just like money; once you have the reputation, you don't have to think about it anymore. However, if your reputation is ruined, it would be very difficult to get it back. Thus, the client first used Hu Wei biao ju's reputation. He knows that if Zhao biao tou refused him, the news would spread and it will ruin the biao ju's reputation. Once the rumours spread, everything will slowly go downhill. Ruined reputations cannot heal within a short period. Thus, that's the reason why Zhao biao tou agreed to take on this

task.”

“You’re right!” Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and Tang Chen totally agreed with Xuan Luo. Although they have thought about it previously, they didn’t see it as clearly as Xuan Luo. Now that Xuan Luo brought it up, it was as if everything had become clear at once.

True, sometimes, reputation is everything. Many would be willing to sacrifice a lot for reputation; that is human nature for you.

“Also, if one were careless, with the amount of gunpowder within the carts, then the result could have been... you know, right now it’s the hottest time of Summer. The temperature is super high right now.” Xuan Luo continued. Tang Chen immediately inhaled a breath of cold air.

It’s true. The July Sun is incredible. If one weren’t careful, the gunpowder could have exploded. That should have been obvious to anyone.

Although they used the chests that the biao ju provided, the heat from the Sun could still go through. It’s like having calcium oxide lying around; when it is heated, it will emit an intense glow...just like burning paper, that process wouldn’t take very long. Gunpowder would take longer to ignite, but that fear is still there.

“Yes, with such a large amount of gunpowder, it could have exploded half way! All of us know how narrowly we escaped.” As Tang Chen thought back, he was aghast.

"Yes, from here, we can tell our client is very smart. And whoever that is behind this definitely hates Zhao biao tou's guts!"

"Yeah! Why didn't I think of this?!" Tang Chen and Xuan Yuan Duan Ai stared at Xuan Luo in awe. They never expected Xuan Luo to analyze this so thoroughly. Xuan Luo was very logical. Plus, Xuan Luo wasn't actually here during the event. He basically listened to Tang Chen and Xuan Yuan Duan Ai and figured out everything on his own. They were definitely impressed.

"More importantly, someone/people robbed the items. Something is clearly wrong with that." Xuan Luo added.

"Aiii, how should we solve this?" Tang Chen looked expectantly at Xuan Luo, hoping he could come up with a solution.

"Umm, I need to do some research first. But before that, I need to find out the background and the power of the Nan gong family." Xuan Luo didn't even hesitate as he gave out his suggestion.

At this moment, someone pushed the door open and out came a fresh looking teenager. The teenager was around Xuan Luo's age, but he looked even more delicate. When comparing himself, Xuan Luo felt like an uncle.

"Tang da ge, Xuan Yuan da ge, it's already quite late. I see that you guys haven't came out for lunch, therefore, I came to bring you guys some food." The boy stated.

"Oh! Thank you, Zhao Xin." Tang Chen didn't realized they have

discussed for so long. It was already nighttime. The sky was pitch dark and the moon has already hung itself up in the sky.

\*I made a mistake in my translation for Chapter 49. People from biao ju deliver the items to certain locations (they're supposed to be very powerful people who can keep the items safe). I originally said it was a place where they keep the valuables safe, but it's actually a place where they deliver the items.. I got confused with another term. Sorry! (Note: There were also stores in Ancient China that kept items safe for a price, but doesn't deliver it to anywhere)

